

ANCIENT WELLS

Foundations for Christian Worship, Theology and Formation

"Your people will rebuild the ancient ruins and will raise up the age-old foundations; you will be called Repairer of Broken Walls, Restorer of Streets with Dwellings."

– Isaiah 58:12

"The goal of liturgical theology, as its very name indicates, is to overcome the fatal divorce between theology, liturgy and piety – a divorce which...has had disastrous consequences for theology as well as for liturgy and piety."

– Alexander Schmemmann, *Of Water & the Spirit*

Compiled by George and Hanna Miley and friends
Draft #8 – For the Teaching Retreat for Spiritual Formation
Austin, Texas, July 25-31, 2010

Not for sale: For private purposes only.

Please do not reproduce this material for public use in any form. Thank you.

Copyright 2010 by George Miley

Scripture quotations, unless noted otherwise, are taken from the *Holy Bible: New International Version*[®].
Copyright 1973, 1978, 1984, International Bible Society. All rights reserved.

The use of selected references from various versions of the Bible in this publication does not necessarily imply publisher endorsement of the versions in their entirety.

Cover design: Patricia Lew

Interior design: George and Hanna Miley and friends

Editorial assistance: John R. Cogdell

Cover photographs: Selected from a collection of ITN photographs

Photographic images: Stone carving - Laodicea, Turkey; Paul's well - Tarsus, Turkey

Contents

Part I: Introduction	1
Article 1: How Ancient Wells Came to be Compiled	2
Part II: Establish the Altar	7
Article 2: Pray without Ceasing: Readings	8
Article 3: Fixed-Hour Prayer: An Introduction	14
Article 4: Introduction to the Psalms	17
Article 5: The Psalms from the Rule of St. Benedict: View 1	19
Article 6: The Psalms from the Rule of St. Benedict: View 2	20
Article 7: The Psalms: Book of Common Prayer	21
Article 8: The Gospels Every Three Months	22
Article 9: Lectio Divina	23
Article 10: Pray without Ceasing: Why? How?	25
Article 11: Worship Understandings within Antioch Network	27
Part III: A Daily Rhythm of Prayer	31
Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework	32
Article 13: Midday Prayer: A General Framework	33
Article 14: Evening Prayer: A General Framework	34
Article 15: Compline: A General Framework	35
Article 16: Morning Prayer	36
Article 17: A Prayer to Begin the Day	39
Article 18: Midday Prayer	41
Article 19: Evening Prayer	43
Article 20: Compline	46
Part IV: Biblical Songs	49
Article 21: Biblical Songs	50
Part V: Songs of the Church	51
Article 22: The Gloria	52
Article 23: Sanctus	53
Article 24: Redeemer of the Nations, Come	54
Article 25: Be Thou My Vision	55
Article 26: O Sacred Head, Now Wounded	56
Article 27: All Creatures of Our God and King	57
Article 28: O God, Our Help in Ages Past	58

Part VI: Jesus of Nazareth: Who is He?	59
Article 29: Jesus Came In Fulfillment Of Prophecy	60
Article 30: Jesus Is Unique	62
Article 31: Jesus Is God	64
Article 32: Jesus Is Man	66
Article 33: Jesus Is Savior	68
Article 34: Jesus Is Teacher	70
Article 35: Jesus Is Lord	72
Article 36: Jesus Is King	74
Article 37: Jesus Is Messiah	76
Article 38: Jesus Is Bridegroom	78
Article 39: Jesus Is Coming Again	80
Part VII: The Life and Teachings of Jesus of Nazareth	83
Article 40: The Kingdom of God: Jesus' Foundational Teaching, Reading 1	84
Article 41: The Kingdom of God: Jesus' Foundational Teaching, Reading 2	86
Article 42: The Kingdom of God: Jesus' Foundational Teaching, Reading 3	88
Article 43: The Kingdom of God: Jesus' Foundational Teaching, Reading 4	90
Article 44: The Kingdom of God: Jesus' Foundational Teaching, Reading 5	92
Article 45: The Teaching Commands of Jesus, Reading 1	94
Article 46: The Teaching Commands of Jesus, Reading 2	96
Article 47: The Teaching Commands of Jesus, Reading 3	98
Article 48: The Teaching Commands of Jesus, Reading 4	100
Article 49: The Teaching Commands of Jesus, Reading 5	102
Article 50: The Healing Commands of Jesus	104
Article 51: The Greatest Commandment: Love – Reading 1	106
Article 52: The Greatest Commandment: Love – Reading 2	108
Part VIII: God: Who is He?.....	111
Article 53: God Is Creator	112
Article 54: God Is Holy	114
Article 55: God Is Love	116
Article 56: God Is Righteous	118
Article 57: God Is Merciful	120
Article 58: God Is All-powerful (Omnipotent)	122
Article 59: God Is All-knowing (Omniscient)	124

Article 60: God Is Everywhere Present (Omnipresent)	126
Article 61: God Is Eternal	128
Part IX: The Person and Work of the Holy Spirit.....	131
Article 62: (Work in Progress)	132
Part X: Biblical Themes	133
Article 63: Apostolic Ministry	134
Article 64: Life out of Death: Living in Our Baptism–Reading 1	136
Article 65: Life out of Death: Living in Our Baptism–Reading 2	138
Part XI: God’s Story in the Scriptures	141
Article 66: (Work in Progress)	142
Part XII: An Overview of Judeo-Christian History	143
Article 67: A View of Judeo-Christian History	144
Article 68: Judeo-Christian History: An Overview	145
Part XIII: Readings from Judeo-Christian History	155
Article 69: Baptism in 3rd Century Rome	156
Article 70: A Cry to the Church	158
Part XIV: Restore the Ancient Anointings.....	161
Article 71: Introduction	162
Article 72: Adam and Eve	164
Article 73: Enoch	166
Article 74: Noah.....	167
Article 75: Abraham	169
Article 76: Isaac	171
Article 77: The Prophet Elijah	173
Article 78: Elijah: Principles from the Life and Ministry of a Prophet	175
Article 79: Queen Esther	177
Article 80: Mary, the Mother of Our Lord	179
Article 81: Mary’s Legacy	181
Article 82: Simeon and Anna	182
Article 83: John the Beloved	183
Article 84: The Apostle Paul	185
Article 85: Ignatius, Bishop of Antioch	187
Article 86: Polycarp, Bishop of Smyrna	189
Article 87: Anthony of Egypt.....	191

Article 88: Patrick of Ireland: Missionary Bishop	193
Article 89: Teresa of Avila.....	196
Article 90: The Ugandan Martyrs	198
Article 91: Thérèse of Lisieux: “The Little Flower”	200
Article 92: Edith Stein.....	202
Article 93: Cardinal Jean-Marie Lustiger	204
Article 94: The Ten Boom Family	205
Part XV: Creeds of the Church	207
Article 95: The Apostles’ Creed	208
Article 96: The Nicene Creed	209
Part XVI: Biblical Prayers.....	211
Article 97: Development of New Testament Worship: Part 2	212
Part XVII: Prayers of the Church.....	213
Article 98: Kyrie Eleison	214
Article 99: The Jesus Prayer	214
Article 100: For the Church	214
Article 101: To You All Hearts Are Open	214
Part XVIII: Teachings	215
Article 102: Apprenticeship to Jesus: Foundational Understandings	216
Article 103: Principles in Spiritual Battle	224
Article 104: Practicing the Presence of God.....	229
Article 105: The Role of Jewish Believers in Reconciliation among Followers of Jesus ..	234
Article 106: Development of a Work of God: Principles	238
Article 107: Spiritual Protection of a Work of God: Principles	239
Article 108: Principles for Financial Well-Being	241
Article 109: Inner Healing	249
Part XIX: Selected Bibliography and Recommended Reading	245
Index	249

PART I: INTRODUCTION

Article 1: How *Ancient Wells* Came to be Compiled

By George and Hanna Miley

The year 2000, in retrospect, was a watershed year for us. As is typically the case in life with God, it unfolded independently from any plan or intention on our part.

Hanna had come to the point where she was ready to investigate and visit the places of her parents' births. We hardly knew where these were. She had been born in the city of Bonn in 1932, although her family lived in the Eifel region of Germany to the west. But neither of her Jewish parents was born there.

After the night of November 9-10, 1938, known in history as Crystal Night, when synagogues all over Germany were burned and rocks thrown through the windows of Jewish businesses and homes, Hanna's father moved the family to the city of Cologne, searching for safety. It was to no avail. In desperation, he ultimately secured a place for her on a children's transport out of Germany to England. She left Cologne during the night of July 24, 1939. She was seven years old. She never saw her parents again. Unable to leave Germany, they perished in the Holocaust.

So in the summer of 2000 we found ourselves once again in Europe. We discovered Heddesheim, today Guldental – a lovely little village in the Nahe wine growing area of Germany just southwest of the Rhine. It was here that Hanna's mother, Amalie Schneider, was born. Hanna's grandfather Schneider had been a wine merchant.

We visited Poland and the town of Brodnica. It was Strassburg, West Prussia, when Hanna's father, Markus Zack, was born there. Markus was a businessman, and at a young age made the long journey from Strassburg in the east to Gemünd in the far west – we don't know why.

But what was originally for us a trip to reconnect with personal history became the beginning of a pilgrimage whose destination is still unknown. That summer God began to call Hanna to return to the Eifel, the land of her fathers.

A year later, in the summer of 2001, responding to what to us was a clear directive from the Lord, we returned to spend a month in Gemünd. While there we found ourselves praying around the town. We visited each place that held a painful memory for Hanna: the location on the Dreiborner Strasse of her former family home (Gemünd was 80% destroyed in World War II); the school yard where others surrounded the Jewish children, singing intimidating and threatening Nazi songs; the community swimming pool where no Jews were allowed; the movie theater where Hanna was denied entrance as a young child to see *Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs*; the former location of the synagogue, destroyed on Crystal Night, to which Hanna remembers walking with her father; and the Jewish cemetery on the edge of town.

Praying in each place, Hanna repeatedly invited Christ to enter into her painful memories with his healing Presence. Then she lifted each one up to him, picturing him on the cross reaching down, receiving into himself all her pain, personally bearing the guilt of those who had caused it and filling her with healing and renewing grace.

Gradually our prayers transitioned into petitions for God to bless Gemünd and the Eifel. God was continuing the miracle He had been working in Hanna's heart for decades – a miracle of

forgiveness, healing and reconciliation. We both asked for God's blessing to come, filling the Eifel and its people with renewing life that can come only from him.

That summer we "heard" the Lord say to us, "Return next summer, and bring intercessors." So in the summer of 2002 we returned again, and with us were 18 intercessors. We spent a week in Gemünd praying for God's blessing to come upon the town and the Eifel region. German brothers and sisters joined us. We sensed God was in the process of birthing something, but we had no clear understanding of what.

Several summers followed in which groups of Christians from Germany and other countries met in Gemünd and other parts of the Eifel to pray for God to bless the region. And as we prayed, God spoke. Here is our best attempt in articulating our understanding of what he said to us:

Prepare the Way for the Lord: What does God want to do in the Eifel? We sensed we were to ask Jesus to come there to live in ever-increasing fullness. What happens when Jesus comes to a region? People turn from false gods. They confess sins past and present, and ask forgiveness of those who have been wronged. Those who have been wronged, in response, extend forgiveness. The way is opened for healing and reconciliation. More of God's fullness is free to enter the lives of individuals and spread throughout society. All this and more is what the Lord does when he comes. Our calling is to be agents who prepare the way for him.

Establish an Altar of Worship and Prayer: Throughout the world, powers of darkness have been allowed to take root in individual lives and societies. God's enemy aggressively opposes those sold out to God. We must come against these powers, but only in God's strength, never in our own. God inhabits the praise of his people. One of the most foundational actions in spiritual battle is to establish centers of worship and prayer. This is a crucial component in preparing the way for the Lord.

Make Apprentices to Jesus in Kingdom Living: Jesus came into the world to be our Savior from sin. He also came as our Teacher. He brought knowledge about life and reality available from no other source. Obeying him ushers us into the fullness of his salvation. He teaches us how to enter the Kingdom of God, and live there a life of fullness, meaning and joy. We prepare the way for Jesus by bringing others to him, so that they may learn from him how to be like him.

Trust Me (God) to transform Individuals into the Likeness of Christ: As we grow in our understanding of Jesus' teachings, his wisdom on how our inner person is transformed comes increasingly into focus. Godliness is not essentially a function of external behavior; it has to do with the kind of person we are becoming on the inside. Jesus said a good tree would bear good fruit and a bad tree would bear bad fruit. On the cross, he forgave his enemies, not because he tried so hard, but because to do so was a natural expression of the kind of person he is. As we walk with Jesus, following his teachings, empowered by the Spirit, we become increasingly like him.

Honor the People of Israel and the Messianic Movement: After many centuries we have among us today a worldwide Messianic Jewish expression of faith in Yeshua (Jesus). This profound spiritual reality presents fresh opportunity for healing the historic rift between the Jewish people and the Church. This will require us Gentile Christians to own the wrongs done to Jewish people throughout Judeo-Christian history, and in appropriate ways seek forgiveness and reconciliation. Restoration of the original Jewish expression of faith (the elder brother) gives opportunity to demonstrate to the world Jew and Gentile reconciled through the power of the cross (Eph. 2:14-16).

Appropriate the Legacy of the Church throughout History: The history of the Church has noticeable parallels with the history of Israel. Both have known periods of spiritual insight, life and power, contrasted with seasons of sin, error and decay. The appearance of great men and women of God has been followed by times when leaders led God's people astray. Being accurately informed about this history, we encounter not only sin and error, but also profound spiritual treasures. Theological writings and liturgical services from past centuries can add great spiritual depth to modern understandings. A healthy and enlightened relationship with Church history will make apprentices to Jesus more mature and effective leaders.

Restore the Ancient Anointings: Men and women who carry anointings from God must be raised up to establish the Kingdom of God throughout the earth. These anointings will mirror those carried by patriarchs, prophets, apostles and martyrs down through the centuries. It is crucial for God's people to have accurate representations and symbols of what a Godly person looks like, and understand how such a one is formed. If the Lord were to move through the Eifel, or any other region, in grace and power, many would be brought into the Kingdom. But who would be there, rooted deeply in God, able to bring this harvest to maturity? Our calling is to prepare them.

Work for Reconciliation among the Christian Traditions: As we have asked Jesus to come to the Eifel and settle there, it is as though we have heard him answer, "If you want me to come, learn to love one another. Otherwise, I will not feel at home among you." The spiritual unity of his Church, for which Jesus prayed in John 17, does not come quickly, cheaply or directly. It is the fruit of a process of reconciliation. Reconciliation forms as forgiveness is extended and received. For heart-forgiveness to be extended, confession and repentance are required. Confession and repentance necessitate owning and speaking the truth about past wrongs. Heart divisions between Church traditions are a dark spiritual stronghold preventing fuller outpouring of spiritual blessing and power.

Teach the Coming Generations: It is clearly the season of life for us, George and Hanna, and others of our age, to focus on passing on whatever the Lord has entrusted to us to members of the generations who will follow. *Ancient Wells* represents a bringing together of our life message and teachings.

Proclaim the Gospel of the Kingdom among All Nations: Here is where we both began – as witnesses to Christ among the nations. And we haven't lost the passion. The message of *Ancient Wells* is a summary of our experience after over 40 years of missionary service: the most effective missionary strategy is to go deep with God.

This is, we believe, what the Lord wants to do in the Eifel region of Germany. But these things, of course, do not apply only to the Eifel. They are God's calling for every region, city, town, village and nation. They outline the process of "Thy kingdom come, thy will be done, on earth..."

Ancient Wells is compiled with the hope that it can support this process everywhere. In the text the word "Church" is capitalized when referring to the universal Church. Without the capital "C", "church" refers to a specific church or a section of the universal Church."

Note: In "Roman Catholic Church" the word "church" is capitalized because it has become a proper name, just as we would write First Baptist Church. If we want to use the word "catholic" to mean the "universal" Church, then we would write it "catholic Church" which is what we find in the creeds. "catholic Church" is the universal Church. "Catholic Church" is understood to be the "Roman Catholic Church."

PART II: ESTABLISH THE ALTAR

Article 2: Pray without Ceasing: Readings

(Note: Readings in Ancient Wells are for use in daily prayer services, and also for instruction. The passages below may be divided into readings of various lengths depending on what is best for the individual or group. An option is for one page or more to be read each day until the entire subject has been covered. Instructions to the reader are in Italics and are not to be read aloud.)

Genesis 8:20-21 – Then Noah built an altar to the LORD and, taking some of all the clean animals and clean birds, he sacrificed burnt offerings on it. The LORD smelled the pleasing aroma....

Genesis 12:7 – The LORD appeared to Abram... “To your offspring I will give this land.” So he built an altar there to the LORD, who had appeared to him.

Genesis 26:25 – Isaac built an altar there and called on the name of the LORD....

Genesis 35:6-7 – Jacob and all the people with him came to Luz (that is, Bethel) in the land of Canaan. There he built an altar, and he called the place El Bethel, because it was there that God revealed himself to him....

Exodus 17:15 – Moses built an altar and called it The LORD is my Banner.

Deuteronomy 27:1-2, 5 – Moses and the elders of Israel commanded the people:.... When you have crossed the Jordan into the land the LORD your God is giving you.... Build there an altar to the LORD your God....

Joshua 1:8 – Do not let this Book of the Law depart from your mouth; meditate on it day and night, so that you may be careful to do everything written in it. Then you will be prosperous and successful.

Joshua 8:30-31 – Then Joshua built on Mount Ebal an altar to the LORD, the God of Israel, as Moses the servant of the LORD had commanded....

Judges 6:24 – So Gideon built an altar to the LORD there and called it The LORD is Peace....

1 Samuel 7:15-17 – Samuel continued as judge over Israel all the days of his life. From year to year he went on a circuit from Bethel to Gilgal to Mizpah, judging Israel in all those places. But he always went back to Ramah, where his home was.... And he built an altar there to the LORD.

2 Samuel 24:25 – David built an altar to the LORD there and sacrificed burnt offerings and fellowship offerings. Then the LORD answered prayer in behalf of the land, and the plague on Israel was stopped.

1 Kings 8:22-23 – Then Solomon stood before the altar of the LORD in front of the whole assembly of Israel...and said: “O LORD, God of Israel, there is no God like you in heaven above or on earth below – you who keep your covenant of love with your servants who continue wholeheartedly in your way....”

1 Kings 18:30 – Then Elijah said to all the people, “Come here to me.” They came to him, and he repaired the altar of the LORD, which was in ruins.

1 Chronicles 16:39-40 – David left Zadok the priest and his fellow priests before the tabernacle of the LORD at the high place in Gibeon to present burnt offerings to the LORD on the

altar of burnt offering regularly, morning and evening, in accordance with everything written in the Law of the LORD....

1 Chronicles 21:18, 26, 22:1 – Then the angel of the LORD ordered Gad to tell David to go up and build an altar to the LORD on the threshing floor of Araunah the Jebusite.... David built an altar to the LORD there...He called on the LORD, and the LORD answered him with fire from heaven...Then David said, “The house of the LORD God is to be here, and also the altar of burnt offering...”

2 Chronicles 7:8-9 – So Solomon observed the festival at that time for seven days, and all Israel with him.... On the eighth day they held an assembly, for they had celebrated the dedication of the altar for seven days and the festival for seven days more.

2 Chronicles 15:8 – When Asa heard these words and the prophecy of Azariah son of Obed the prophet, he took courage. He removed the detestable idols from the whole land of Judah and Benjamin and from the towns he had captured in the hills of Ephraim. He repaired the altar of the LORD that was in front of the portico of the LORD’S temple.

2 Chronicles 30:21, 23 – The Israelites...in Jerusalem celebrated the Feast of Unleavened Bread for seven days with great rejoicing, while the Levites and priests sang to the LORD every day, accompanied by the LORD’S instruments of praise.... The whole assembly then agreed to celebrate the festival seven more days; so for another seven days they celebrated joyfully.

2 Chronicles 34:29-30 – Then the king called together all the elders of Judah and Jerusalem. He went up to the temple of the LORD with the men of Judah, the people of Jerusalem, the priests and the Levites – all the people from the least to the greatest. He read in their hearing all the words of the Book of the Covenant, which had been found in the temple of the LORD.

Ezra 3:2-3 – Then Jeshua son of Jozadak and his fellow priests and Zerubbabel son of Shealtiel and his associates began to build the altar of the God of Israel.... they built the altar on its foundation and sacrificed burnt offerings on it to the LORD, both the morning and evening sacrifices.

Nehemiah 1:4-6 –For some days I mourned and fasted and prayed before the God of heaven. Then I said, “O LORD, God of heaven, the great and awesome God...let your ear be attentive and your eyes open to hear the prayer your servant is praying before you day and night....

Psalms 1:1-2 – Blessed is the man who does not walk in the counsel of the wicked or stand in the way of sinners or sit in the seat of mockers. But his delight is in the law of the LORD, and on his law he meditates day and night.

Psalms 5:3 – In the morning, O LORD, you hear my voice; in the morning I lay my requests before you and wait in expectation.

Psalms 16:8 – I keep the LORD always before me; because he is at my right hand, I shall not be moved.

Psalms 27:4 – One thing I ask of the LORD, this is what I seek: that I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life, to gaze upon the beauty of the LORD and to seek him in his temple.

Psalm 30:11-12 – You turned my wailing into dancing; you removed my sackcloth and clothed me with joy, that my heart may sing to you and not be silent. O LORD my God, I will give you thanks forever.

Psalm 34:1 – I will extol the LORD at all times; his praise will always be on my lips.

Psalm 42:8 – By day the LORD directs his love, at night his song is with me – a prayer to the God of my life.

Psalm 55:16-17 – But I call to God, and the LORD saves me. Evening, morning and noon I cry out in distress, and he hears my voice.

Psalm 59:16 – But I will sing of your strength, in the morning I will sing of your love; for you are my fortress, my refuge in times of trouble.

Psalm 61:8 – Then will I ever sing praise to your name and fulfill my vows day after day.

Psalm 62:8 – Trust in him at all times, O people; pour out your hearts to him, for God is our refuge. Selah

Psalm 63:5-6 – My soul will be satisfied as with the richest of foods; with singing lips my mouth will praise you. On my bed I remember you; I think of you through the watches of the night.

Psalm 77:6 – I remembered my songs in the night. My heart mused and my spirit inquired.

Psalm 84:1-2, 4 – How lovely is your dwelling place, O LORD Almighty! My soul yearns, even faints, for the courts of the LORD; my heart and my flesh cry out for the living God.... Blessed are those who dwell in your house; they are ever praising you.

Psalm 86:3 – Have mercy on me, O Lord, for I call to you all day long.

Psalm 88:1 – O LORD, the God who saves me, day and night I cry out before you.

Psalm 88:9 –I call to you, O LORD, every day; I spread out my hands to you.

Psalm 91:1-2 – He who dwells in the shelter of the Most High will rest in the shadow of the Almighty. I will say of the LORD, "He is my refuge and my fortress, my God, in whom I trust."

Psalm 92:1-2 – It is good to praise the LORD and make music to your name, O Most High, to proclaim your love in the morning and your faithfulness at night.

Psalm 96:1-2 – Sing to the LORD a new song; sing to the LORD, all the earth. Sing to the LORD, praise his name; proclaim his salvation day after day.

Psalm 105:4 – Look to the LORD and his strength; seek his face always.

Psalm 108:1-2 – My heart is steadfast, O God; I will sing and make music with all my soul. Awake, harp and lyre! I will awaken the dawn.

Psalm 113:3 – From the rising of the sun to the place where it sets, the name of the LORD is to be praised.

Psalm 119:62 – At midnight I rise to give you thanks for your righteous laws.

Psalm 119:97 – Oh, how I love your law! I meditate on it all day long.

Psalm 119:147-148 – I rise before dawn and cry for help; I have put my hope in your word. My eyes stay open through the watches of the night, that I may meditate on your promises.

Psalm 119:164 – Seven times a day I praise you for your righteous laws.

Psalm 130:5-6 – I wait for the LORD, my soul waits, and in his word I put my hope. My soul waits for the Lord more than watchmen wait for the morning, more than watchmen wait for the morning.

Psalm 134:1-2 – Praise the LORD, all you servants of the LORD who minister by night in the house of the LORD. Lift up your hands in the sanctuary and praise the LORD.

Psalm 141:2 – May my prayer be set before you like incense; may the lifting up of my hands be like the evening sacrifice.

Psalm 145:1-2 – I will extol you, my God and King, and bless your name forever and ever. Every day I will bless you, and praise your name...

Isaiah 56:1,7 – This is what the LORD says: "... my house will be called a house of prayer for all nations."

Ezekiel 22:30 – "I looked for a man among them who would build up the wall and stand before me in the gap on behalf of the land so I would not have to destroy it, but I found none."

Daniel 6:10 – Now when Daniel learned that the decree had been published, he went home to his upstairs room where the windows opened toward Jerusalem. Three times a day he got down on his knees and prayed, giving thanks to his God, just as he had done before.

Matthew 26:36, 38, 40-41 – Then Jesus went with his disciples to a place called Gethsemane, and he said to them, "Sit here while I go over there and pray."... Then he said to them, "... Stay here and keep watch with me."... Then he returned to his disciples and found them sleeping. "Could you men not keep watch with me for one hour?" he asked Peter. "Watch and pray so that you will not fall into temptation. The spirit is willing, but the body is weak."

Mark 1:35 – Very early in the morning, while it was still dark, Jesus got up, left the house and went off to a solitary place, where he prayed.

Luke 6:12 – One of those days Jesus went out to a mountainside to pray, and spent the night praying to God.

Luke 18:1 – Then Jesus told his disciples a parable to show them that they should always pray and not give up.

Luke 18:7-8 – And will not God bring about justice for his chosen ones, who cry out to him day and night? Will he keep putting them off? I tell you, he will see that they get justice, and quickly. However, when the Son of Man comes, will he find faith on the earth?

Acts 1:14 – They all joined together constantly in prayer, along with the women and Mary, the mother of Jesus, and with his brothers.

Acts 2:42 – They devoted themselves to the apostles' teaching and to the fellowship, to the breaking of bread and to prayer.

Acts 3:1 – One day Peter and John were going up to the temple at the time of prayer—at three in the afternoon.

Acts 4:23-24 – On their release, Peter and John went back to their own people and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said to them. When they heard this, they raised their voices together in prayer to God....

Acts 6:2-4 – So the Twelve gathered all the disciples together and said, “It would not be right for us to neglect the ministry of the word of God in order to wait on tables. Brothers, choose seven men from among you who are known to be full of the Spirit and wisdom. We will turn this responsibility over to them, and will give our attention to prayer and the ministry of the word.”

Acts 9:10-11 – In Damascus there was a disciple named Ananias. The Lord called to him in a vision, “Ananias!” “Yes, Lord,” he answered. The Lord told him, “Go to the house of Judas on Straight Street and ask for a man from Tarsus named Saul, for he is praying.”

Acts 10:1-3 – At Caesarea there was a man named Cornelius, a centurion in what was known as the Italian Regiment. He and all his family were devout and God-fearing; he gave generously to those in need and prayed to God regularly. One day at about three in the afternoon he had a vision...

Acts 10:9 – About noon the following day as they were on their journey and approaching the city, Peter went up on the roof to pray.

Acts 12:5 – So Peter was kept in prison, but the church was earnestly praying to God for him.

Acts 16:25 – About midnight Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and the other prisoners were listening to them.

Romans 1:9-10 – God, whom I serve with my whole heart in preaching the gospel of his Son, is my witness how constantly I remember you in my prayers at all times...

Romans 8:26 – In the same way, the Spirit helps us in our weaknesses. We do not know what we ought to pray for, but the Spirit himself intercedes for us with groans that words cannot express.

Romans 12:12 – Be joyful in hope, patient in affliction, faithful in prayer.

Ephesians 1:15-16 – For this reason, ever since I heard about your faith in the Lord Jesus and your love for all the saints, I have not stopped giving thanks for you, remembering you in my prayers.

Ephesians 6:18 – And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints.

Philippians 4:6 – Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God.

Colossians 4:2 – Devote yourselves to prayer, being watchful and thankful.

Colossians 4:12 – Epaphras, who is one of you and a servant of Christ Jesus, sends greetings. He is always wrestling in prayer for you, that you may stand firm in all the will of God, mature and fully assured.

1 Thessalonians 5:17 – pray continually

1 Timothy 2:1 – I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession and thanksgiving be made for everyone

1 Timothy 5:5 – The widow who is really in need and left all alone puts her hope in God and continues night and day to pray and to ask God for help.

Hebrews 13:15 – Through Jesus, therefore, let us continually offer to God a sacrifice of praise—the fruit of lips that confess his name.

Revelation 4:8 – Each of the four living creatures had six wings and was covered with eyes all around, even under his wings. Day and night they never stop saying: “Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come.”

Revelation 5:8 – And when he had taken it, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb. Each one had a harp and they were holding golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints.

Revelation 7:15 – Therefore, “they are before the throne of God and serve him day and night in his temple; and he who sits on the throne will spread his tent over them.”

Revelation 8:3-4 – Another angel, who had a golden censer, came and stood at the altar. He was given much incense to offer, with the prayers of all the saints, on the golden altar before the throne. The smoke of the incense, together with the prayers of the saints, went up before God from the angel’s hand.

Article 3: Fixed-Hour Prayer: An Introduction

The following is adapted from *The Divine Hours: Prayers for Autumn and Wintertime* by Phyllis Tickle.¹

* * * * *

From its earliest beginnings Christian worship developed within two settings:

The first was the gathering of believers on the first day of the week. Here worship was structured around the gospel and the shared meal.

The second was a rhythm of worship and prayer ordering weekdays. This was typically done in smaller groups, such as families, or individually. It came to be understood as the Church's work.

This second worship structure has been variously known in Church history as "The Liturgy of the Hours", "The Divine Hours", "keeping the hours," "saying the offices," and "fixed-hour prayer". Its tools have been the Scriptures, especially the Psalms, the breviaries of monastic worship and the Book of Hours manuals for the laity.

The Age of the Apostles

The origins of fixed-hour prayer take us back to pre-Christian Judaism. Centuries before Christ the psalmist wrote, "Seven times a day do I praise you" (Psalm 119:164). We are not sure of the actual hours of Judaism's set prayers, but by the time of Jesus these daily prayers had assumed something close to their present schedule.

Jews accustomed to fixed hours for prayer were scattered throughout the Roman Empire. The empire's efficiency depended on the orderly flow of each business day. Typically the forum bell would sound the day's beginning at six o'clock each morning (prime or first hour); note the day's progress by striking again at nine o'clock (terce or third hour); sound the lunch break at noon (sext or sixth hour); call citizens back to work at three o'clock (none or ninth hour); and close the day's markets at six o'clock (vespers or evening hour). Every part of daily life in Roman culture was ordered by the forum bells, including Jewish prayer and, subsequently, Christian prayer.

Peter and John healed a lame man on the Temple steps because two devout Jews (who did not yet know they were Christians) were on their way to ninth-hour prayers. Peter's vision of the descending sheet (Acts 10) occurred at noon on a rooftop because he had gone there to observe sixth-hour prayers. In Joppa, far from Jerusalem and the Temple, Peter sought solitude on his host's rooftop as a site for keeping the appointed time of prayer. Flexibility became a characteristic of fixed-hour prayer.

From its earliest beginnings the Christian community used the Psalms in its worship (Acts 4:23-30). The Psalter has remained the living core of the daily offices. By around 60 A.D. the first known manual of Christian practice, the *Didache*, was teaching the inclusion of the Lord's Prayer at least three times each day, a usage that was to expand quickly to include all the offices.

¹ *The Divine Hours: Prayers for Autumn and Wintertime* by Phyllis Tickle, pp. vii-xii.

From the Apostles to the Early Fathers

Early Fathers of the Church – Clement (c. 150-215), Origen (c. 185-254) and Tertullian (c. 160-225) – assumed that Christians would observe prayers at morning and evening as well as at the so-called “little hours” of terce (9 am) , sext (noon) and none (3 pm). Such daily prayers could be said alone, by families or in small groups.

In the 3rd century, the Desert Fathers, the Church’s earliest monastics, began to pursue living out Paul’s call to “pray without ceasing”. They soon discovered that continuous prayer is best reached in community. One group of monks, having just prayed an office, would pass the praying seamlessly on to the next group waiting to pray the next office. This introduced the idea of a continuous cascade of prayer being offered to God – a concept that remains to our time. This is to pray from a community of shared texts, and within the company of many others – seen and unseen.

From St. Benedict to the Middle Ages

Once the vision of uninterrupted prayer entered monastic practice, prayer times became longer and more complex. Fixed-hour prayers became normative in both Eastern and Western branches of the Church. By the 4th century, the principal characteristic of the daily offices as we know them today were in place.

Meanwhile, for nonmonastic clergy and laity, prayers appointed for fixed hours were of necessity much shorter, often something like the brief minutes of present-day practice. There were also many churches or basilicas that were pastored by monastic orders. In these there was some blending of the two forms. Benedict fashioned his Rule after the offices as they were observed by monastics in the open basilicas of Rome.

Benedict’s formulation of the prayers became like a master template for those through the centuries who would follow. It was Benedict who first said, “To pray is to work, to work is to pray.” This articulated a core concept of Christian spirituality – spiritual life and physical life are inseparable. He also advanced the concept of “divine work.”

“Office” comes from the Latin *opus*, or “work.” For most English speakers, it connotes a place rather than an activity. Yet we refer to political work as “offices” (He is running for office). And many who govern work are called “officers” of a commercial or civic unit.

So in an earlier age that was much closer than we are to the original meaning of *opus*, it was entirely fitting that “office” should become the term for “the work of God.” For Benedict, fixed-hour prayer was *opus dei*, “the work of God”. As for the hours on whose striking the prayers are done, those belong to God and are therefore “divine.”

The Divine Hours are prayers of praise offered as a sacrifice of thanksgiving and faith to God and as a sweet-smelling incense of the human soul before his throne. To offer them is to serve before that throne as part of the priesthood of all believers. It is to assume the “office” of honoring and blessing the Divine.

The words and ordering of the prayers of the Divine Hours have changed often over the centuries, but their purpose has remained steady. Praying the Liturgy of the Hours is an act of worship. The worshipper finds his inner life – thoughts, emotions, decisions and character – formed over time by the ongoing discipline of prayer, but that is a wonderful by-product of the practice, not its purpose.

From the Middle Ages to the Present

By the 11th century, saying an office required a stack of books – a Psalter for the appointed Psalms, a lectionary for readings, a sacred text from which to read the Scripture, a hymnal, etc. As small towns developed, taking people away from cathedral centers where such tools were available, there was the need to assemble these parts into more manageable and portable forms.

And so the breviary was born, a manual for keeping the daily offices. These have varied over the centuries from order to order, from church to church, and from communion to communion.

For example, the Anglican Communion at the time of the Reformation created a new prayer book for the Church of England – *Book of Common Prayer*, or simply *BCP*. It has gone through many updates and revisions, adjusting to changing times and sensibilities. Through its many editions, it still influences the spirituality of millions of Christians, many of them not Anglican or even English.

In 1971, in accord with the work of the Second Vatican Council, Pope Paul VI issued *The Liturgy of the Hours*, modifying the offices to an ordering very similar to the one the American *BCP* would assume eight years later.

Over the centuries manuals for Divine Hours have preserved these principles:

- The discipline of praise is the work of God and the core of the offices.
- The vision of a cascade of prayer being lifted ceaselessly by Christians around the world energizes the worship.
- There is recognition of a communion of saints across both time and space.
- The Psalms is the informing text of all the offices. Theirs are the words, rhythms, and understandings Jesus used in his own devotions.
- The use of components like the Our Father within each office is appropriate.

The repetition of prayers, creeds, and sacred texts has great effect in the inner formation of the worshipper.

Article 4: Introduction to the Psalms

The Church's full format of prayer includes, among many other components, the weekly recitation of the entire Book of Psalms. Indeed, "among" is scarcely an adequate word in this case because of the very special place that psalmody holds in the Christian life of prayer. From the very beginning of her history, when the Church of God turns to him in love and devotion, the words of the Psalter form the expressions that spontaneously, as by an impulse of her nature, rise from her heart and take shape in her mouth. The psalms find their truest context in the heart and on the lips of the Church. Those whose lips constantly move with the syllables of the Psalter give living expression to the deepest being of the Church.

Considered as a fact of history, the primacy of the Psalter in Christian prayer seems very clear. When Saint Benedict of Nursia, in the sixth century, prescribed the weekly reciting of the Book of Psalms as the barest monastic minimum, he lamented the inability of his contemporaries to perform that task every day, as earlier generations of monks had done. Likewise, those modern Protestant pocketbook Bibles, containing only the New Testament and the Psalms, embody a very ancient and deep insight of the Christian faith that sees the Psalter almost as part of the New Testament itself. When the Orthodox in this country (US) published their first volume of the Orthodox Study Bible, the Book of Psalms was appropriately placed with the New Testament.

...in the most primitive period of Christian history – in Jerusalem itself and prior to the conversion of Saint Paul – we have our first extant example of the use of a psalm in Christian worship. The relevant text is Acts 4:24-30, where we find Christians, evidently within the first months of Christian history, praying a section from Psalm 2.

...It is the profound Christian persuasion that Christ walks within the psalms, and this is the reason that the Book of Psalms is the Old Testament book most often quoted in the New Testament. When He opened their eyes to the meaning of Holy Scripture, the risen Lord explained to his disciples the things concerning himself "in the Law of Moses, in the prophets, and in the psalms" (Luke 24:44). Immediately after his ascension, when the Church gathered prayerfully in the upper room to await Pentecost, the brethren chose a replacement for the fallen Judas by having recourse to the Book of Psalms (Acts 1:20). Then, when the Pentecostal Spirit descended upon them and they began to preach, their first sermon was an exegesis of two psalms (Acts 2:25-35).

Christians have always sung the psalms (James 5:13). Properly to pray the psalms is to pray them in Jesus' name, because the voice of the Psalter is Christ's own voice. Christ is the referential center of the Book of Psalms. Even in speaking to one another, Christians invoke the psalms (Ephesians 5:19; Colossians 3:16). Christian lips readily break forth with the words of the Psalter, because the Christian heart meditates on the psalms day and night. Ultimately the words of the psalms are the mighty name of Jesus broken down into its component parts. Thus has it always been.²

In the Psalms we see and hear the ways God nurtures the nation of Israel and continues to form an all-inclusive community through the development of liturgical praise and prayer.

² *Christ in the Psalms*, Reardon – pp. xv-xvii.

...Praise and prayer – these two spiritual practices articulate our most fundamental relationship to God. The Psalter expresses, with more immediacy and completeness than any other part of the Bible, how the People of God are formed spiritually.

...In the Psalter the language of praise, adoration, thanksgiving, intercession, petition, complaint, disappointment, remembrance, anger, relinquishment and repentance is beautifully and memorably available. Ordinary persons like ourselves simply cannot come up with such language on our own, but we can enter into it... And these inspired poetic expressions can, under God, be the focus of great joy and character transformation as we allow them to sink deep into our hearts.

...Liturgical and ritual performance can be a source of great strength and direction in our spiritual formation.... Frankly, there is no such thing as purely inward religion. That would defy the reality of our embodied selves and the significance of the body and behavior in our godly formation. The contribution of poetry and ritual to the formation of the heart and life in corporate as well as individual worship is indispensable to all robust formation in Christlikeness.

... "O sing to the LORD a new song," the old song says (Ps. 96:1), and we do, but the old songs, the Psalms, still stand at the heart of Christian life and worship. The Psalms are the oldest, most universally accepted texts of faith, constantly in use for millennia.... most of the psalms we have were probably written between 1000 and 400 BC. Yet the people of God have sung them in Israel's temple, in synagogues, at Qumram, in the houses and catacombs of early Christianity, in cathedrals and monasteries, in prisons and jungles, on street corners and in simple buildings, wherever they met to worship. They are Israel's and the Church's first prayer book and first hymnbook.

...It is moving to know that anytime we sing or pray a psalm, we are never alone. We are always joining others somewhere around the world who are reciting it at the same time. Though we grow greatly in using them privately, we profit even more when we embrace the Psalms as the songs of God's people. God's people shaped the Psalms – composing, gathering, and preserving them – and the Psalms in turn continue to shape the people. As we enter into these songs, they teach us and give us words to pray... They teach us the language of prayer with its words and cadences, its gladness and mystery. They give us words when we don't have words.

Christian writers throughout history have insisted that the only way we can come to understand the Psalms is by praying them and by using them in ways that allow them to shape us. This involves a conscious choice that contradicts common habits.... instead of working on the text, we let the text work on us.... It means embracing the text rather than holding it at arm's length.... being vulnerable to hear how God might address us through the text rather than managing the text to serve our curiosity and need to control...These texts are not words of instruction like those we find in the Prophets, the Gospels, or the Letters. Instead, they are words we bring to God....³

³ Excerpts from *Renovaré Spiritual Formation Bible*, pp. 769-777.

Article 5: The Psalms from the *Rule of St. Benedict*: View 1⁴

Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
Vigils (At night)						
3	3	3	3	3	3	3
95	95	95	95	95	95	95
21	33	46	60	74	86	102
22	34	47	61	75	87	103
23	35	48	62	77	89a	104a
24	37a	49	66	78a	89b	104b
25	37b	50	68a	78b	93	105a
26	38	52	68b	79	94	105b
27	39	53	69a	80	96	106a
28	40	54	69b	81	97	106b
29	41	55	70	82	98	107a
30	42	56	71	83	99	107b
31	44	58	72	84	100	108
32	45	59	73	85	101	109
Lauds (At Daybreak)						
67	67	67	67	67	67	67
51	51	51	51	51	51	51
118	5	43	64	88	76	143
63	36	57	65	90	92	---
148	148	148	148	148	148	148
149	149	149	149	149	149	149
150	150	150	150	150	150	150
Prime (6 a.m.)						
119a	1	7	10	13	16	18b
119b	2	8	11	14	17	19
119c	6	9	12	15	18a	20
119d	---	---	---	---	---	---
Terce (9 a.m.)						
119e	119n	120	120	120	120	120
119f	119o	121	121	121	121	121
119g	119p	122	122	122	122	122
Sext (Noon)						
119h	119q	123	123	123	123	123
119i	119r	124	124	124	124	124
119j	119s	125	125	125	125	125
None (3 p.m.)						
119k	119t	126	126	126	126	126
119l	119u	127	127	127	127	127
119m	119v	128	128	128	128	128
Vespers (At Sunset)						
110	114/115	130	135	139a	142	145b
111	116a	131	136	139b	144a	146
112	116b/117	132	137	140	144b	147a
113	129	133	138	141	145a	147b
Compline (End of the Day)						
4	4	4	4	4	4	4
91	91	91	91	91	91	91
134	134	134	134	134	134	134

⁴ From <http://individual.utoronto.ca/aaronorear/psalmody.html>, June 8, 2010.

Article 6: The Psalms from the *Rule of St. Benedict*: View 2

The *Rule of St. Benedict* was compiled by Benedict of Nursia (480-547). It contains a rhythm of daily prayer for praying through the entire Psalter once a week. This has formed the heart of the Hours of Prayer for the monastic communities who have followed Benedict's Rule down through the centuries. To the left of each office is the number to the Psalm according to the Hebrew numbering.⁵

1	Mon: Prime	46	Tue: Vigils	89b	Fri: Vigils	119l	Sun: None
2	Mon: Prime	47	Tue: Vigils	90	Thu: Lauds	119m	Sun: None
3	Daily: Vigils	48	Tue: Vigils	91	Daily: Comp	119n	Mon: Terce
4	Daily: Comp	49	Tue: Vigils	92	Fri: Lauds	119o	Mon: Terce
5	Mon: Lauds	50	Tue: Vigils	93	Fri: Vigils	119p	Mon: Terce
6	Mon: Prime	51	Daily: Lauds	94	Fri: Vigils	119q	Mon: Sext
7	Tue: Prime	52	Tue: Vigils	95	Daily: Vigils	119r	Mon: Sext
8	Tue: Prime	53	Tue: Vigils	96	Fri: Vigils	119s	Mon: Sext
9	Tue: Prime	54	Tue: Vigils	97	Fri: Vigils	119t	Mon: None
10	Wed: Prime	55	Tue: Vigils	98	Fri: Vigils	119u	Mon: None
11	Wed: Prime	56	Tue: Vigils	99	Fri: Vigils	119v	Mon: None
12	Wed: Prime	57	Tue: Lauds	100	Fri: Vigils	120	Tue-Sat:Terce
13	Thu: Prime	58	Tue: Vigils	101	Fri: Vigils	121	Tue-Sat:Terce
14	Thu: Prime	59	Tue: Vigils	102	Sat: Vigils	122	Tue-Sat:Terce
15	Thu: Prime	60	Wed: Vigils	103	Sat: Vigils	123	Tue-Sat: Sext
16	Fri: Prime	61	Wed: Vigils	104a	Sat: Vigils	124	Tue-Sat: Sext
17	Fri: Prime	62	Wed: Vigils	104b	Sat: Vigils	125	Tue-Sat: Sext
18a	Fri: Prime	63	Sun: Lauds	105a	Sat: Vigils	126	Tue-Sat: None
18b	Sat: Prime	64	Wed: Lauds	105b	Sat: Vigils	127	Tue-Sat; Non
19	Sat: Prime	65	Wed: Lauds	106a	Sat: Vigils	128	Tue-Sat: None
20	Sat: Prime	66	Wed: Vigils	106b	Sat: Vigils	129	Mon: Vespers
21	Sun: Vigils	67	Daily: Lauds	107a	Sat: Vigils	130	Tue: Vespers
22	Sun: Vigils	68a	Wed: Vigils	107b	Sat: Vigils	131	Tue: Vespers
23	Sun: Vigils	68b	Wed: Vigils	108	Sat: Vigils	132	Tue: Vespers
24	Sun: Vigils	69a	Wed: Vigils	109	Sat: Vigils	133	Tue: Vespers
25	Sun: Vigils	69b	Wed: Vigils	110	Sun: Vespers	134	Daily: Comp
26	Sun: Vigils	70	Wed: Vigils	111	Sun: Vespers	135	Wed: Vespers
27	Sun: Vigils	71	Wed: Vigils	112	Sun: Vespers	136	Wed: Vespers
28	Sun: Vigils	72	Wed: Vigils	113	Sun: Vespers	137	Wed: Vespers
29	Sun: Vigils	73	Wed: Vigils	114	Mon: Vespers	138	Wed: Vespers
30	Sun: Vigils	74	Thu: Vigils	115	Mon: Vespers	139a	Thu: Vespers
31	Sun: Vigils	75	Thu: Vigils	116a	Mon: Vespers	139b	Thu: Vespers
32	Sun: Vigils	76	Fri: Lauds	116b	Mon: Vespers	140	Thu: Vespers
33	Mon: Vigils	77	Thu: Vigils	117	Mon: Vespers	141	Thu: Vespers
34	Mon: Vigils	78a	Thu: Vigils	118	Sun: Lauds	142	Fri: Vespers
35	Mon: Vigils	78b	Thu: Vigils	119a	Sun: Prime	143	Sat: Lauds
36	Mon: Lauds	79	Thu: Vigils	119b	Sun: Prime	144a	Fri: Vespers
37a	Mon: Vigils	80	Thu: Vigils	119c	Sun: Prime	144b	Fri: Vespers
37b	Mon: Vigils	81	Thu: Vigils	119d	Sun: Prime	145a	Fri: Vespers
38	Mon: Vigils	82	Thu: Vigils	119e	Sun: Terce	145b	Sat: Vespers
39	Mon: Vigils	83	Thu: Vigils	119f	Sun: Terce	146	Sat: Vespers
40	Mon: Vigils	84	Thu: Vigils	119g	Sun: Terce	147a	Sat: Vespers

⁵ This overview was drawn from <http://individual.utoronto.ca/aaronorear/psalmody.html>, June 8, 2010.

Article 7: The Psalms: *Book of Common Prayer*

This plan from the *Book of Common Prayer*, 1979, pp. 585-808, leads worshippers through Psalms once a month.

1	Day 1: Morning Prayer	53	Day 10: Evening Prayer	105	Day 21: Morning Prayer
2	"	54	"	106	Day 21: Evening Prayer
3	"	55	"	107	Day 22: Morning Prayer
4	"	56	Day 11: Morning Prayer	108	Day 22: Evening Prayer
5	"	57	"	109	"
6	Day 1: Evening Prayer	58	"	110	Day 23: Morning Prayer
7	"	59	Day 11: Evening Prayer	111	"
8	"	60	"	112	"
9	Day 2: Morning Prayer	61	"	113	"
10	"	62	Day 12: Morning Prayer	114	Day 23: Evening Prayer
11	"	63	"	115	"
12	Day 2: Evening Prayer	64	"	116	Day 24: Morning Prayer
13	"	65	Day 12: Evening Prayer	117	"
14	"	66	"	118	"
15	Day 3: Morning Prayer	67	"	119:a-d	Day 24: Evening Prayer
16	"	68	Day 13: Morning Prayer	119:h-t	Day 25: Morning Prayer
17	"	69	Day 13: Evening Prayer	119:y-m	Day 25: Evening Prayer
18	Day 3: Evening Prayer	70	"	119:n-s	Day 26: Morning Prayer
19	Day 4: Morning Prayer	71	Day 14: Morning Prayer	119:q-t	Day 26: Evening Prayer
20	"	72	"	120	Day 27: Morning Prayer
21	"	73	Day 14: Evening Prayer	121	"
22	Day 4: Evening Prayer	74	"	122	"
23	"	75	Day 15: Morning Prayer	123	"
24	Day 5: Morning Prayer	76	"	124	"
25	"	77	"	125	"
26	"	78	Day 15: Evening Prayer	126	Day 27: Evening Prayer
27	Day 5: Evening Prayer	79	Day 16: Morning Prayer	127	"
28	"	80	"	128	"
29	"	81	"	129	"
30	Day 6: Morning Prayer	82	Day 16: Evening Prayer	130	"
31	"	83	"	131	"
32	Day 6: Evening Prayer	84	"	132	Day 28: Morning Prayer
33	"	85	"	133	"
34	"	86	Day 17: Morning Prayer	134	"
35	Day 7: Morning Prayer	87	"	135	"
36	"	88	"	136	Day 28: Evening Prayer
37	Day 7: Evening Prayer	89	Day 17: Evening Prayer	137	"
38	Day 8: Morning Prayer	90	Day 18: Morning Prayer	138	"
39	"	91	"	139	Day 29: Morning Prayer
40	"	92	"	140	"
41	Day 8: Evening Prayer	93	Day 18: Evening Prayer	141	Day 29: Evening Prayer
42	"	94	"	142	"
43	"	95	Day 19: Morning Prayer	143	"
44	Day 9: Morning Prayer	96	"	144	Day 30: Morning Prayer
45	"	97	"	145	"
46	"	98	Day 19: Evening Prayer	146	"
47	Day 9: Evening Prayer	99	"	147	Day 30: Evening Prayer
48	"	100	"	148	"
49	"	101	"	149	"
50	Day 10: Morning Prayer	102	Day 20: Morning Prayer	150	"
51	"	103	"		
52	"	104	Day 20: Evening Prayer		

Article 8: The Gospels Every Three Months

What input best advances ongoing transformation of the inner person into Christlikeness? We have already explored the Psalms, so powerfully used by the Holy Spirit in the lives of men and women over the centuries – from David through the history of Israel and the Church.

We now turn to the Gospels and Jesus of Nazareth, the greatest Teacher history has ever known. To immerse our minds and hearts in his life and teaching has profound outworking. It is transformational. Jesus, more than any other, brought to us the words of eternal life.

One way to approach connecting with Jesus and his teachings is to immerse ourselves in the Gospels. We simply allow their message as a whole wash over us. Reading a chapter a day will expose us to their entirety once every three months.

Another approach is to take much shorter passages and focus on prayerful, in-depth contemplation. For help in doing this, see the article on *Lectio-Divina*.

1 st Month		2 nd Month		3 rd Month	
Day		Day		Day	
1	Matthew 1	1	Mark 3	1	Luke 16
2	Matthew 2	2	Mark 4	2	Luke 17
3	Matthew 3	3	Mark 5	3	Luke 18
4	Matthew 4	4	Mark 6	4	Luke 19
5	Matthew 5	5	Mark 7	5	Luke 20
6	Matthew 6	6	Mark 8	6	Luke 21
7	Matthew 7	7	Mark 9	7	Luke 22
8	Matthew 8	8	Mark 10	8	Luke 23
9	Matthew 9	9	Mark 11	9	Luke 24
10	Matthew 10	10	Mark 12	10	John 1
11	Matthew 11	11	Mark 13	11	John 2
12	Matthew 12	12	Mark 14	12	John 3
13	Matthew 13	13	Mark 15	13	John 4
14	Matthew 14	14	Mark 16	14	John 5
15	Matthew 15	15	Luke 1	15	John 6
16	Matthew 16	16	Luke 2	16	John 7
17	Matthew 17	17	Luke 3	17	John 8
18	Matthew 18	18	Luke 4	18	John 9
19	Matthew 19	19	Luke 5	19	John 10
20	Matthew 20	20	Luke 6	20	John 11
21	Matthew 21	21	Luke 7	21	John 12
22	Matthew 22	22	Luke 8	22	John 13
23	Matthew 23	23	Luke 9	23	John 14
24	Matthew 24	24	Luke 10	24	John 15
25	Matthew 25	25	Luke 11	25	John 16
26	Matthew 26	26	Luke 12	26	John 17
27	Matthew 27	27	Luke 13	27	John 18
28	Matthew 28	28	Luke 14	28	John 19
29	Mark 1	29	Luke 15	29	John 20
30	Mark 2	30	-----	30	John 21

Article 9: Lectio Divina

In Scripture we find Christ, and in Christ we find eternal, abundant life. That is why we read. This exercise of *Lectio Divina* is a prayerful reading from the heart.

Lectio Divina (sacred reading) is an ancient Christian discipline which helps draw us into this formational approach to reading Scripture. The four movements of this practice are described below. Many people, when learning to read in this way, find it helpful to begin with the Psalms or the Gospels, since they speak so clearly and directly of our relationship with Christ.

You might find that one of following passages, for example, provides a good starting point:

- Psalm 139 – God’s intimate knowledge of us
- Matthew 8:23-27 – Jesus calms the storm
- Mark 2:1-12 – Jesus heals a paralyzed man
- Luke 19: 1-10 – Jesus and Zaccheus
- John 20:11-18 – Jesus appears to Mary Magdalene

The *Lectio Divina* process: Take a moment to come fully into the Presence. Sit comfortably alert, close your eyes, and center yourself with breathing deeply.

Reading (*lectio*): We begin with the slow, prayerful and attentive reading of the Bible. This is not the time for devouring great chunks of Scripture, or for detailed scholarly study. Take some small passage; read, re-read, and read again. Be wholly present to the text, and alert to the voice of the Spirit speaking through it.

Reflecting (*meditatio*): At some point in our reading, some phrase, sentence, or idea might “catch” in our thoughts. Like a jeweler examining a diamond, we turn the phrase over and over in our hearts, letting one facet after another reveal itself, listening for the gentle voice of the Spirit. We pause and allow the words to settle in our spirits.

Responding (*oratio*): Our meditation on Scripture will often naturally develop into prayer. Perhaps as I reflect on God’s grace revealed in some phrase, I begin to pray for that grace to be revealed in my life. Or, as I reflect on God’s compassion, I begin to ask for that loving mercy to be shown to others in my life. Allowing the words to stir up prayer within us draws us from “informational reading” into “relational reading.”

Resting (*contemplatio*): Finally, having been ushered into the divine Presence, and having shared our hearts with him, we fall into easy silence, giving space to God to be present to us. He may have something more to share, to say; He may simply want the pleasure of our uninterrupted company. Without agenda, we put ourselves at God’s disposal, making an offering of our time and love.

Lectio Divina Shared in Groups of 4-8⁶

Listening for the Gentle Touch of Christ the Word (*The Literal Sense*)

1. *One person reads aloud* (twice) the passage of scripture, as others are attentive to some segment that is especially meaningful to them.
2. *Silence follows for 1-2 minutes.* Each hears and silently repeats a word or phrase that attracts.
3. *Then there is sharing aloud.* Each person shares a word or phrase that has attracted them. This is a simple statement of one or a few words with no elaboration.

How Christ the Word speaks to ME (*The Allegorical Sense*)

4. There is a second reading of the same passage by another person.
5. Silence follows for 2-3 minutes. Reflect on the question, "Where does the content of this reading touch my life today?"
6. Then there is sharing aloud briefly: "This is what I hear, I see..."

What Christ the Word invites me to DO (*The Moral Sense*)

7. There is a third reading by still another person.
8. Again there is silence for 2-3 minutes. Reflect on "I believe that God wants me to...today/this week."
9. We share aloud at somewhat greater length the results of each one's reflection. Be especially aware of what is shared by the person to your right.
10. After full sharing, pray for the person to your right.

Note: Anyone may "pass" at any time. If instead of sharing with the group you prefer to pray silently, simply state this aloud and conclude your silent prayer with "Amen."

⁶ by Fr. Luke Dysinger, O. S. B. This article may be downloaded, reproduced and distributed without special permission from the author. It was first published in the Spring, 1990 (vol.1, no.1) edition of Valyermo Benedictine. It was reprinted as "Appendix 2" in *The Art and Vocation of Caring for People in Pain* by Karl A. Schultz (Paulist Press, 1993), pp. 98-110.

Article 10: Pray without Ceasing: Why? How?

Why would Christians – groups or individuals – desire to pray without ceasing? What is praying without ceasing anyway? Even if one were drawn to such a thing, in light of life's realities, how could it ever be possible?

What is prayer? In its most fundamental form, prayer is coming present to God and simply remaining there, responding to him. To pray without ceasing is to live in ongoing awareness of and interaction with God. We were created for this; it is "natural" to who we truly are. In the garden, before the fall, our first parents lived in uninterrupted communion with God. They lived continually in the Presence. For them, prayer did not cease.

What happened? Humans typically experience God as being far away. Reality is that God is right here with us. We ask, "God, where are you?" God's question of our first parents was, "Where are you?" (Genesis 3:9) God has not gone away. We have.

The consequences within us: Our declaration of independence from God, and our subsequent attitudes of self-sufficiency and self-reliance, have caused far-reaching effects within us. Severe damage has occurred in each component of our personality: our thoughts, emotions, wills, bodies, souls and social contexts. Ever since our fall, awareness of God's Presence can be easily broken and continue for an extended period. We have lost the knowledge of how to be with God, and the power to implement that knowledge should we regain it.

The Answer – our part: The human being has an incredible ability to learn things and to store that knowledge. Think of the ability to speak a language. We learn this – subconsciously – early in life, and store this knowledge in our thoughts, emotions, wills and bodies (e.g., how to form the sounds). In the same way, we must learn how – be re-trained – to live continually in God's Presence.

The knowledge of how to do this is not remote or inaccessible. We need look no than the Scriptures, and especially the life and teaching of Jesus of Nazareth. In apprenticeship to Jesus, we learn from him how to be with the Father, and to live in his Presence – continually. "Abide in me, and I will abide in you."

But as Jesus, and his first apprentices – the apostles – made clear, this re-training will require effort and costly decisions on our part. The damage that has occurred in us has been extensive. We have stored deeply in our subconscious the habits of death that routinely keep us from God. We must go through a far-reaching process of reorientation as to what we consider important. Our schedules will have to undergo fundamental readjustments based on a new set of priorities. Much must be unlearned before the ways of life can be formed within us.

We have learned habits that result in us living apart from God. Jesus teaches us life disciplines to train us how to break into this learned behavior, and re-center ourselves away from self and onto God. Here is where disciplines of prayer at regular times throughout the day come in. They break into our compulsivities of self-orientation and self-will, and turn us again – repeatedly – to God.

The Answer – God's part: God's part is to respond to our heart decisions by granting us his empowerment. This He does through the person of the Holy Spirit residing and working within us. God will not do this for us, or to us, but he will indeed do it with us. As we make faith decisions to return to the knowledge of God and his ways, the Spirit responds with a work of

cleansing, healing and transformation within. And, indeed, we must be transformed. Living continually in the Presence can only become reality when it becomes a genuine and natural expression of the person we are becoming on the inside through apprenticeship to Jesus and the transforming work of the Spirit. And, in turn, living in the Presence itself further transforms us.

Helpful principles:

1. Growing in our capacity to remain in our Father's Presence will be a process. It will involve new learning on deeper levels. Many subconsciously rooted habits must be unearthed and retrained. We will need much patience with ourselves, just as our Father in heaven will have patience with us. We won't get it right right away. But over time, as the Holy Spirit continues his transforming work, we will notice the progress.

2. We are not the first ones to embark on this journey. The liturgical worship of Israel contained in the Psalter witnesses to the pursuit our spiritual fathers and mothers undertook to be with God day and night. Their passion has continued throughout Church history. It is ongoing today.

3. The history of this search has much to teach us. For example, being part of a fellowship of people who are on this journey can be a great help. This should not discourage the individual who, for now, finds himself or herself without a group with whom to pray. We start where we are.

4. We need words – a vocabulary:

Our own words: In prayer our own words have true value. With them we can express our understanding of our desires and needs to our Father. But there are also limitations – even dangers – if we are limited to our own words. Our words may accurately express what is in our hearts, but what is in our hearts might not be accurate. We may be unaware of our true needs or how to express them. Our words can be enriched and informed by the words of others.

The words of Scripture: In the Scripture the Holy Spirit has given us a rich and inspired prayer vocabulary. Both Old and New Testaments contain individual and corporate prayers of the people of Israel and the Church. This vocabulary enriches our own. It teaches us how to pray, gives us deeper richness in our thoughts, and keeps us theologically anchored.

The words of others: Words from others can also enrich our vocabulary and deepen our prayer life. We must always be aware to bring them under the authority and confirmation of Scripture. Praying the prayers of men and women of God throughout Church history who truly knew how to pray puts us in touch with our spiritual heritage, and informs our understanding of Church history.

5. "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength.... Love your neighbor as yourself." (Mark 12:30-31) To be able to do this, our hearts (wills), souls, minds (thoughts and feelings), and strength (bodies) – and our social contexts (interactions with our neighbors) – must be transformed. This transformation takes place day by day as we increasingly learn how to, and are empowered to, abide in prayer in the Presence of God.

6. Spiritual disciplines do not give us merit. When entered into by faith, spiritual disciplines increasingly enlarge the place within us that is able to receive the grace that is always freely being offered to us from God through our Lord Jesus Christ.

Article 11: Worship Understandings within Antioch Network

We honor our origins. In 1987 Antioch Network was birthed within the Evangelical/Charismatic tradition. Our understandings and expressions of worship are rooted here. We are deeply grateful for and respectful of these origins. In worship we want to continue to draw upon these foundations.

Our understandings have broadened. Over the years we have come to understand that the Church streams of our origins developed from earlier foundations. We are heirs to a Judeo-Christian worship dating back thousands of years. We want to be faithful to this sacred inheritance and honor the understandings of worship our fathers and mothers in the faith have passed down to us.

Christian unity is a fruit of Christian reconciliation. From our earliest days Antioch Network has known God's call to champion and nurture unity among Christians. We now understand that reconciliation must be the forerunner of unity. Heart divisions among those who carry his name grieve our Lord. We desire our worship to reflect our calling to a ministry of reconciliation among all Christian streams: Messianic, Eastern Orthodox, Roman Catholic, historic Protestant, Evangelical, Charismatic, etc. We want to honor each tradition by learning from and incorporating its worship forms.

Our earliest roots are in the worship of Israel. We see that Christian worship is rooted in the worship of Israel as recorded in the Old Testament. We want to honor these roots by keeping these worship forms current in appropriate ways. The use of the Psalms is a primary, although not exclusive, example. We look to the growing Messianic movement – our elder brother in the faith – to teach us how to do this.

Music is but one component of worship. Historically both Israel and the Church have understood that music is only one component of worship, albeit a very important one. The worship of the one true God has included Psalms, Biblical songs, songs of the Church, Biblical prayers, prayers of the Church, Biblical readings, creeds, confessions of sin, preaching and teaching, being inspired by the lives of those who have gone before us, the Church year, baptism and communion.

Those to whom God has entrusted spiritual leadership among his people are to lead them in worship. Judeo-Christian worship has historically recognized that the calling and anointing to lead in worship is different from the calling and anointing to lead in worship music, although certainly a person may have both callings. We believe the leaders of Antioch Network, beginning with members of the Council, although not limited to them, are to play a leading role in our worship.

In worship we anticipate encountering God. Spirit-directed and Spirit-anointed worship fosters a corporate awareness of God's Presence. In this Presence he speaks in ways of his choosing, at times birthing creative ideas, giving individual or corporate direction, or giving further confirmation for existing understandings. Thus another important component of worship is waiting upon God – making space for him through unhurried listening and discerning.

Worshippers participate actively. Judeo-Christian worship is characterized by the active participation of the worshippers. The term that historically has referred to the order of the

Church's worship services is liturgy. Noted Orthodox scholar Alexander Schmemmann informs us that liturgy has always meant "a corporate act in which the whole Church, i.e., the entire community, is involved, in which it really participates."⁷ There is even the feel of drama to parts of historical worship. Powerful and meaningful worship is not a performance where the congregation remains observers, and participation is not limited to singing.

Biblical worship is centered in God and his salvation initiatives. Worshippers are never the focus. Biblical worship is a response. God has taken the initiative to bring salvation to fallen men. In Israel, this initiative was centered in the events of the Exodus: the miracles in Egypt, the going forth of the people, the wilderness wanderings and the entry into the Promised Land. In the New Testament God's initiative was centered in the events surrounding the life, death, resurrection and ascension of Christ. Historically these events have been remembered whenever Christians gathered to worship, not only in words, but also in sacred actions. This remembering invites a worship response in the hearts of God's people as they focus on him and his saving acts.

Symbols play an important role in worship. Symbols are the building blocks of communication. Words are symbols; language is a symbolic system. Today we easily understand that God often becomes Present and moves through words. This is also true of other symbols, as, again, Judeo-Christian worship shows us. Symbols bind up and communicate realities that are often beyond the capacity of words. The Scriptures teach that the events of the Exodus and the descriptions of how the tabernacle was to be built and used are filled with symbolic revelation and meaning. The Cross is the most influential symbol human history has ever produced, and belongs to all Christian worship traditions, beginning with the Messianic. We want to carefully and with true discernment be led by the Spirit in employing Judeo-Christian symbolism in worship.

We are still learning. Within the Antioch Network fellowship we are on a continuing journey in which the Spirit is teaching us and further developing our shared worship understandings and experience. We continue to learn from each of the Church streams. We are finding richness in having various people within the fellowship create a worship service and lead us in it. Each individual brings uniqueness to the worship expression that enriches the entire fellowship. Truly no one worship tradition can begin to contain or do justice to the greatness and glory of God.

Great is the LORD and most worthy of praise; his greatness no one can fathom. One generation will commend your works to another; they will tell of your mighty acts. Psalm 145:3-4

Recommended reading: Robert E. Webber, *Worship Old & New*, Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1994

⁷ Alexander Schmemmann, *Of Water & The Spirit: A Liturgical Study of Baptism*, Crestwood: St. Vladimir's Seminary Press, 1974, p. 8.

PART III: A DAILY RHYTHM OF PRAYER

The Divine Hours

Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework

Introduction: Over the centuries a sacred inheritance has been passed down to us through the worship of Israel and the Church. It is appropriate that our devotion today reflect and honor this legacy; our ancestors in the faith have much to teach us. It is also right for contemporary worship to follow contemporary norms. Below are components the Church has generally found to be meaningful for daily prayer services. Worship leaders may use discernment in making insertions and rearrangements. Worship is anchored and enriched when it connects symbolically with God's activity in history. Structure, flexibility and spontaneity are important components.

The value of silence: Today our lives are filled with words. Too many words reduce the impact of all words. In designing prayer services, we may do well to err on the side of using fewer words and leaving more space to wait in silence in the Presence of God. Especially before Confession of Sin a period of silence is appropriate.

Opening Words "assemble" the people and indicate the service is beginning. They call worshippers to come present to God, centering themselves in him. The Scriptures are rich with possibilities, especially the Book of Psalms. For Morning Prayer, words may be chosen that especially speak of worshipping God at the beginning of the day.

Songs may be selected from several sources. Ancient hymns become vehicles for joining the worship of those who have gone before us. Contemporary God-centered songs allow us to engage with more recent moves of the Spirit. When instrumental accompaniment is not available, songs may be read. This facilitates the use of Biblical songs from both Old and New Testaments. Songs may be inserted in other parts of services of Morning Prayer.

Confession of Sin: Regularly bringing our sins to the cross is a foundational discipline in growth toward Christian maturity. It opens the way to forgiveness, cleansing, healing and the formation of the person in Christlikeness. Once a day, or even more often, is not too much. Establishing this in corporate practice can strengthen its private usage. Words from the Scriptures or from worship history may be used. When done in truth from the heart, confession removes unseen obstacles to worship. It should be accompanied by a declaration of forgiveness in the name of Christ.

Psalms(s): These liturgical songs and prayers have been central in the worship of Israel and the Church for centuries. They take us back 3,000 years to the original formation of the Psalter during David's time. Note from *The Psalms from the Rule of St. Benedict: View 1 (Ancient Wells, Article 5)* that Benedict had his houses of 24/7 prayer (monasteries) pray Psalms 51, 67, 148, 149 and 150 each day at Lauds, the equivalent of Morning Prayer. Protestant reformers continued the use of the Psalms in their liturgies.

Readings: During Morning Prayer the Church has often used an Old Testament reading, a New Testament reading and a reading from the Gospels. In many traditions, worshippers stand during the reading of the Gospel to show reverence for the life and teachings of the Lord. In the early Church, readings in public worship were also taken from letters. Some of these became part of the New Testament canon, while others did not. If the worship leader discerns the need for a devotional talk, this would be a good place.

Creed: The historic creeds root us in the Church universal, both in time and breadth. They express what has been generally accepted as Christian orthodoxy throughout the ages. Especially the Apostles' Creed has been used in the daily prayer services. The Nicene Creed is also a good choice. Protestant reformers continued to use the creeds in their worship services.

Prayers may be selected from Biblical prayers found in both Old and New Testaments, and from prayers used historically in the worship of the Church up to the present time. Typically the Lord's Prayer has been prayed in each of the daily prayer services.

Spontaneous Thanksgivings and Prayers: There is great value in praying the inspired words of Scripture, and those of others that have endured the test of time. We also need to offer God the spontaneous expressions of our hearts. The former informs and enriches the latter. Modern worshippers may also be more familiar and comfortable with this form of prayer.

Benediction: The benediction, or closing blessing, signals an end to the service. This may be taken from the Scriptures, from worship history, or be spoken spontaneously.

Article 13: Midday Prayer: A General Framework

See introduction to *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. Midday Prayer is usually shorter than Morning Prayer but please spend all the time you have available.

Opening Words: See comments on Opening Words in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. Opening Words for Midday Prayer may be chosen that are suitable for worshipping God in the middle of the day or in the midst of the work day.

Songs: See comments on Songs in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. Services of Midday Prayer are usually shorter than those of Morning Prayer, so it may be appropriate for songs to be read, or not used at all.

Psalms(s): See comments on Psalms in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. Note from *The Psalms from the Rule of St. Benedict: View 1 (Ancient Wells, Article 5, p. XX)* that on most days Benedict had his houses of 24/7 prayer (monasteries) pray Psalms 120-134 (songs of ascent or pilgrimage) during the day's middle hours.

Readings: See comments on Readings in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. To have readings from the Old Testament, New Testament, Gospels and other sources will usually be too much for the shorter services of Midday Prayer.

Prayers: See comments on Prayers in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Spontaneous Thanksgivings and Prayers: See comments on Spontaneous Thanksgivings and Prayers in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Benediction: See comments on Benediction in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Article 14: Evening Prayer: A General Framework

See introduction to *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Opening Words: See comments on Opening Words in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. Words may be chosen that are especially appropriate for worshipping God in the evening, or at the close of the work day.

Song(s): See comments on Song(s) in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Confession of Sin: See comments on Confession of Sin in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. On occasions when there will also be a service of Compline, Confession of Sin may be omitted in Evening Prayer and used in Compline.

Psalm(s): See comments on Psalm(s) in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Readings: See comments on Readings in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Creed: See comments on Creed in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Prayers: See comments on Prayers in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Spontaneous Thanksgivings and Prayers: See comments on Spontaneous Thanksgivings and Prayers in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Benediction: See comments on Benediction in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Article 15: Compline: A General Framework

See introduction to *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. Compline is designed to be the last activity of the day before retiring. Like Noonday Prayer, it is often a shorter service but please spend all the time you have available.

Opening Words: See comments on Opening Words in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. Words may be chosen that are especially appropriate for offering thanks to God at the close of the day and just before retiring.

Songs: See comments on Songs in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. If songs are to be used in services of Compline, it is important that they are appropriate for preparing worshippers for rest during the night.

Confession of Sin: See comments on Confession of Sin in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. Confession of Sin is especially appropriate at the beginning and ending of the day.

Psalm(s): See comments on Psalm(s) in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. Note from *Article 5: The Psalms from the Rule of St. Benedict: View 1 (Ancient Wells)*, p. XX that Benedict had his houses of 24/7 prayer (monasteries) pray Psalms 4, 91 and 134 each day before going to bed.

Prayers: See comments on Prayers in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*. Praying the Lord's Prayer in services of Compline is especially appropriate.

Spontaneous Thanksgivings and Prayers: See comments on Spontaneous Thanksgivings and Prayers in *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Benediction: See comments on Benediction *Article 12: Morning Prayer: A General Framework*.

Article 16: Morning Prayer

Call to Prayer

Leader: Come, let us bow down in worship, let us kneel before the LORD our Maker.

All: For he is our God and we are the people of his pasture, the flock under his care⁸

Leader: Blessed be God: Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.

All: And blessed be his kingdom, now and for ever. Amen.

Leader: Almighty God, to you all hearts are open, all desires known, and from you no secrets are hid: Cleanse the thoughts of our hearts by the inspiration of your Holy Spirit, that we may perfectly love you, and worthily magnify your holy Name; through Christ our Lord. Amen.⁹

Song(s)

Confession of Sin

Leader: Dear friends in Christ, here in the presence of Almighty God, let us bow in silence, and with penitent and obedient hearts confess our sins, so that we may obtain forgiveness by his infinite goodness and mercy.¹⁰

Silence

Leader: Who is it that you seek?

All: We seek the Lord our God.

Leader: Do you seek him with all your heart?

All: Amen. Lord, have mercy.

Leader: Do you seek him with all your soul?

All: Amen. Lord, have mercy.

Leader: Do you seek him with all your mind?

All: Amen. Lord, have mercy.

Leader: Do you seek him with all your strength?

All: Amen. Lord, have mercy.

Leader: Do you seek to love your neighbor as yourself?

All: Amen. Christ, have mercy.¹¹

Silence

⁸ Psalm 95:6-7.

⁹ Book of Common Prayer.

¹⁰ Book of Common Prayer.

¹¹ Adapted from Celtic Daily Prayer.

*Leader: Almighty God have mercy on us, forgive us all our sins through our Lord Jesus Christ, strengthen us in all goodness, and by the power of the Holy Spirit keep us in eternal life. Amen.*¹²

Psalm(s)

Readers: Each in turn reads one verse until the psalm is completed.

Reading(s)

Readers: Each in turn reads one paragraph until the reading is completed.

Nicene Creed

We believe in one God,
the Father, the Almighty,
maker of heaven and earth,
of all that is, seen and unseen.

We believe in one Lord, Jesus Christ,
the only Son of God,
eternally begotten of the Father,
God from God, Light from Light,
true God from true God,
begotten, not made,
of one Being with the Father.

Through him all things were made.

For us and for our salvation he came down from heaven:
by the power of the Holy Spirit he became incarnate from the Virgin Mary, and
was made man.

For our sake he was crucified under Pontius Pilate; he suffered death and was
buried.

On the third day he rose again in accordance with the Scriptures;
he ascended into heaven and is seated at the right hand of the Father.

He will come again in glory to judge the living and the dead, and his kingdom will
have no end.

We believe in the Holy Spirit, the Lord, the giver of life,
who proceeds from the Father and the Son.¹³

With the Father and the Son he is worshipped and glorified.

He has spoken through the Prophets.

We believe in one holy catholic and apostolic Church.

We acknowledge one baptism for the forgiveness of sins.

We look for the resurrection of the dead, and the life of the world to come.

Amen.¹⁴

Spontaneous Thanksgivings and Prayers

The Lord's Prayer

¹² *Book of Common Prayer.*

¹³ The Orthodox church does not include the words "and the Son".

¹⁴ *Book of Common Prayer, p. 358.*

Extracted from Patrick's Breastplate

All: Christ be with me, Christ within me,
Christ behind me, Christ before me,
Christ beside me, Christ to win me,
Christ to comfort and restore me,
Christ beneath me, Christ above me,
Christ in quiet, Christ in danger,
Christ in hearts of all that love me,
Christ in mouth of friend and stranger.

Song(s)

Concluding Prayer of the Church

Leader: *Lord, hear the prayers of your people
and bring the hearts of believers together in your praise
and in common sorrow for their sins.
Heal all divisions among Christians
that we may rejoice in the perfect unity of your Church
and move together as one to eternal life in your kingdom.*

All: Grant this through our Lord Jesus Christ, your Son, Who lives and reigns
with you and the Holy Spirit, One God, forever and ever. Amen.¹⁵

Aaronic Benediction

Leader: *The LORD said to Moses, "Tell Aaron and his sons, 'This is how you are to
bless the Israelites. Say to them: "The LORD bless you and keep you; the
LORD make his face shine upon you and be gracious to you; the LORD turn
his face toward you and give you peace.'""¹⁶*

¹⁵ *The Liturgy of the Hours.*

¹⁶ *Numbers 6:22-26.*

Article 17: A Prayer to Begin the Day

In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, Amen.

Father, I thank you for the unique way you have created me.

Heavenly Father, I am so thankful to be able to approach my Creator, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, with reverence and fear. The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge. You are God. I am not. You are in control. Hallelujah!

Father, I know that the fact that I exist is not the result of random chance. A decision was made by a Person that I would come into being. I was not that person. I did not exist. You, Father, were that Person.

You decided the year in which I would be born. You chose my parents. You formed me in my mother's womb. You decided whether I would be male or female. You gave me my unique characteristics. You formed the parts of my body – arms, legs, fingers and toes. You gave me a heart that could pump, lungs that could breathe, eyes that could see and ears that could hear. You were with my mother and me while I was being born. I am fearfully and wonderfully made. Thank you!

I honor you, Heavenly Father, by honoring the parents you chose for me. I honor my earthly father. I thank you for all I have received through my mother. Lord Jesus, I bring to your cross any ways in which I have dishonored them. In doing so, I sinned against you, against them, and against myself. I ask for your mercy, your cleansing and your healing. In any ways in which my parents wronged me, by your grace, I forgive them.

Since my birth you have been with me, protecting and guiding me. You have shielded me from people and events that would have harmed me, and from unwise decisions I would have made. You made yourself known to me. Thank you, Father. You have done well by me. Surely goodness and mercy have followed me all the days of my life.

Lord Jesus, I bring my sin and pain to your cross.

Lord Jesus, I am so thankful for your cross. Because you suffered so, yielding up your life for me, there is a place to which I can come with my sin and my pain. Nowhere else can sin be redeemed, and at your cross there is no sin that cannot be redeemed. I am totally unworthy to bring my sin and pain to you. But I have nowhere else to go.

Lord Jesus, I now lift up my sin to you on the cross. *In quietness and rest, picture in your mind Jesus hanging on the cross. See yourself approaching him. Take each sin that comes to your awareness, and see yourself lifting it up to him. To start with, there is the sin of not having loved the Lord your God with all your heart, and not having loved your neighbor as yourself. What else, specifically, is the Spirit showing you? As you bring your sin to Jesus, nailed for you to the cross, what do you see him do with it?*

O Lord, have mercy. Lord Jesus, forgive. Cleanse me from the effects of my sin, O Lord. Create in me a clean heart. Heal me. Heal those whom I have wounded through my sin. Transform me into your likeness.

Lord Jesus Christ, I lift my pain to your cross. I bring to you the pain caused by my own sin, but also by the sin which surrounds me in a world of wrongness. I know that much of this pain I am not even aware of. I have pushed it down, denied it and tried covering it up. I did not know what

else to do with it, Lord. It is still there, producing its destructive effects, both within me and throughout my external contexts.

Lord, I know that some of my pain is multi-generational, passed down through my family. Lord, in the grace that you give, I forgive. I thank you that I am not a victim; I have a Heavenly Father who is my Protector, Redeemer and Provider. Christ, I take responsibility to learn from you how to respond correctly to the ways in which I have been wronged. I know I am formed, not by what happens to me, but how I respond to what happens to me. Teach me your ways Lord Jesus. I can't heal myself, but you can.

Holy Spirit, please fill every part of my person.

Holy Spirit, I invoke your Presence. I ask you to come. I wait for you. I welcome you. I worship you. I thank you.

Spirit of God, please come and fill my heart, that I might love the Lord my God with all my heart. Fill my will. I bring my will now into submissive fellowship with your will.

Spirit of Jesus, I ask you to come and fill my soul, that I might love the Lord my God with all my soul. When my soul is centered in God, it is at rest, and my whole person is in order and at peace. When my soul is not centered in God, it is fragmented, and my whole person is chaotic, disordered and dysfunctional.

Spirit of Truth, come and fill my mind, that I might love the Lord my God with all my mind.

Fill my analytical thoughts that my reasoning might be rooted in what is true and real.

Fill my imaginative thoughts that the symbols in my mind might be ordered aright, that my soul might be shielded from all that would enter through my imagination to harm it, and that new levels of creativity might be released from within me for your glory.

Fill my emotions, Holy Comforter, that I might know the God-ordained dignity of being human. Transform diseased emotions into healthy, glorious ones – the kind you have. Come with your healing Presence into my wounded emotions. Deliver me from reactions energized out of pain, from words and actions that dishonor you, others and myself.

Holy Spirit, please come and fill my body, that I might love the Lord my God with all my strength. Restore my body to the condition you intended it to have when you created me. *Now bring any parts of your body that are on your mind, giving you concern, to the Spirit, asking him to fill and heal those parts, or to enable you to accept them with joy.*

Spirit of God, come and fill my social context that I might love my neighbor as myself. In my every interaction with another person, may I be a channel for the reality of your kingdom to touch and enter his/her experience.

In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, Amen.

Article 18: Midday Prayer

Call to Prayer

Leader: O God, come to my assistance.

All: O Lord, make haste to help me.

Glory be to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Spirit. As it was in the beginning, is now, and ever shall be, world without end. Amen.¹⁷

Psalm

Readers: Each in turn reads one verse until the Psalm is completed.

The Shema

Leader: This is what our Lord Jesus Christ said: "Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God, the Lord is one. Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength." and "Love your neighbor as yourself." There is no commandment greater than these."¹⁸

Reading

Readers: Each in turn reads one paragraph until the reading is completed.

Spontaneous Thanksgivings and Prayers

Prayer of Francis of Assisi

*All: Lord, make me an instrument of thy peace.
Where there is hatred, let me sow love;
Where there is injury, pardon;
Where there is despair, hope;
Where there is darkness, light;
Where there is sadness, joy.*

*O Divine Master, grant that I may
Not so much seek to be consoled, as to console;
Not so much to be understood as to understand;
Not so much to be loved as to love;*

*For it is in giving that we receive;
It is in pardoning that we are pardoned;
It is in dying that we awaken to eternal life.¹⁹*

Concluding Prayer of the Church

¹⁷ *Benedictine Daily Prayer.*

¹⁸ *From Mark 12:29-31.*

¹⁹ *From A Lion Handbook: The History of Christianity.*

*Leader: Father, look with love on your people
And pour out upon them the gifts of your Spirit.
May they constantly grow in the love of truth.
May they study and work together
For perfect unity among Christians.*

*All: We ask this through our Lord Jesus Christ, your Son, Who lives and reigns with
you and the Holy Spirit, One God, forever and ever. Amen.²⁰*

Benediction

*Leader: Lord, you have been our dwelling place throughout all generations. Teach us to number
our days aright that we may gain a heart of wisdom. May the favor of the Lord our God
rest upon us and establish the work of our hands.²¹*

²⁰ *Liturgy of the Hours.*

²¹ *From Psalm 90.*

Article 19: Evening Prayer

Call to Prayer

Leader: The LORD is in his holy temple;

All: Let all the earth be silent before him.²²

Leader: May my prayer be set before you like incense;

All: May the lifting up of my hands be like the evening sacrifice.²³

Leader: Lord Jesus Christ, stay with us, for evening is at hand and the day is past; be our companion in the way, kindle our hearts, and awaken hope. May we know you as you truly are, we ask for the glory of your name. Amen.²⁴

Song(s)

Confession of Sin

Leader: Let us confess our sins against God and our neighbor.

Silence

Leader: Have mercy on me, O God, according to your unfailing love;

All: According to your great compassion blot out my transgressions.

Leader: Wash away all my iniquity and cleanse me from my sin.

All: For I know my transgressions, and my sin is always before me.

Leader: Against you, you only, have I sinned and done what is evil in your sight,

All: So that you are proved right when you speak and justified when you judge.

Leader: Create in me a pure heart, O God,

All: And renew a steadfast spirit within me.

Leader: If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us.

All: If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just, and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.²⁵

Silence

Leader: Almighty God have mercy on us, forgive us all our sins through our Lord Jesus Christ, strengthen us in all goodness, and by the power of the Holy Spirit keep us in eternal life. Amen.²⁶

²² Habakkuk 2:20.

²³ Psalm 141:2.

²⁴ Adapted from Book of Common Prayer.

²⁵ From Psalm 51 and 1 John 1.

²⁶ Book of Common Prayer.

Psalm(s)

Readers: Each in turn reads one verse until the psalm is completed.

Apostles Creed

I believe in God, the Father almighty,
creator of heaven and earth.

I believe in Jesus Christ his only Son, our Lord.
He was conceived by the power of the Holy Spirit
and born of the Virgin Mary.
He suffered under Pontius Pilate,
was crucified, died, and was buried.
He descended to the dead.
On the third day he rose again.
He ascended into heaven,
and is seated at the right hand of the Father.
He will come again to judge the living and the dead.

I believe in the Holy Spirit,
the holy catholic Church,
the communion of saints,
the forgiveness of sins, the resurrection of the body,
and the life everlasting. Amen.²⁷

Reading(s)

Readers: Each in turn reads one paragraph until the reading is completed.

Spontaneous Thanksgivings and Prayers

The Lord's Prayer

Methodist Covenant Prayer

All: I am no longer my own, but Thine.
Put me to what Thou wilt, rank me with whom Thou wilt;
put me to doing, put me to suffering;
let me be employed for Thee or laid aside for Thee;
let me be exalted for Thee, or brought low for Thee;
let me be full, let me be empty;
let me have all things, let me have nothing;
I freely and heartily yield all things to Thy pleasure and disposal.

And now, O glorious and blessed God, Father, Son and Holy Spirit,
Thou are mine, and I am Thine. So be it.

And the covenant which I have made on earth, let it be ratified in heaven.
Amen.²⁸

Song(s)

²⁷*Book of Common Prayer*, p. 96.

²⁸ *Celtic Daily Prayer*.

Concluding Prayer of the Church

Leader: *Lord, lover of mankind,
Fill us with the love your Spirit gives.
May we live in a manner worthy of our calling;
Make us witnesses of your truth to all men
And help us work to bring all believers together
In the unity of faith and the fellowship of peace.*

All: Grant this through our Lord Jesus Christ, your Son, Who lives and reigns
with you and the Holy Spirit, One God, forever and ever. Amen.²⁹

Nunc dimittis

Leader: *"Sovereign Lord, as you have promised, you now dismiss your servant in peace.
For my eyes have seen your salvation, which you have prepared in the sight of
all people, a light for revelation to the Gentiles and for glory to your people
Israel."³⁰*

²⁹ *The Liturgy of the Hours.*

³⁰ *Luke 2:29-32.*

Article 20: Compline

Call to Prayer

Leader: Praise the LORD, all you servants of the LORD who minister by night in the house of the LORD.

All: Lift up your hands in the sanctuary and praise the LORD.

Leader: May the LORD, the Maker of heaven and earth, bless you from Zion.³¹

Call to Peace

Leader: There is one body and one Spirit

All: There is one hope in God's call to us;

Leader: There is one Lord, one faith, one baptism;

All: One God and Father of all, who is over all, through all and in all.

Leader: "A new command I give you: Love one another."

All: They will know that we are his disciples, if we love one another.

Leader: "I pray that all of them may be one, Father, as we one."

All: In this way the world may believe that the Father has sent him.³²

Psalm(s)

Readers: Each in turn reads one verse until the psalm(s) are completed.

Reading(s)

Readers: Each in turn reads one paragraph until the reading is completed.

Spontaneous Thanksgivings and Prayers

The Lord's Prayer

A Carmelite Vow

*All: Let each stay in or near their own cell
Meditating day and night on the law of the Lord,
And vigilant in prayer,
Unless otherwise employed by the Holy Spirit.³³*

³¹ Psalm 134.

³² Adapted from Ephesians 4:4-6; John 13:34-35; 17:20-22.

³³ *Celtic Daily Prayer*, p. 48.

Teresa's Bookmark

Leader: *Let nothing trouble you, let nothing frighten you.
All things are passing; God never changes!
Patience obtains all things.
He who possesses God lacks nothing; God alone suffices. Amen.*³⁴

³⁴ *Teresa of Avila.*

PART IV: BIBLICAL SONGS

Article 21: Biblical Songs

Old Testament Songs

The Song of Moses – Exodus 15:1-18

The Song of Hannah – 1 Samuel 2:1-10

A Song of David – 2 Samuel 22:1-51 (Psalm 18)

The Development of New Testament Worship

"...scholars make a case that the *Magnificat* (Luke 1:46-55), the *Benedictus* (Luke 1:68-79), the *Gloria in Excelsis Deo* (Luke 2:14), and the *Nunc Dimittis* (Luke 2:29-32) were all hymns of the church, known and used by the church before their incorporation into the gospel text. The same has been said for the Christ hymns such as John 1:1-18, Philippians 2:6-11, and Colossians 1:15-20, and the many psalms and doxologies such as those found in Revelation (4:8, 11; 7:12; 11:17-18; 15:3-4). It seems reasonable to assume that worship traditions would have developed and spread rapidly among the various Christian communities. Since the Gospels were not written for a number of years after Pentecost, the development of hymns, doxologies, and baptismal catecheses that predate the literature of the New Testament seems natural."³⁵

The Song of Mary: *Magnificat* – Luke 1:46-55

The Song of Zechariah: *Benedictus* – Luke 1:67-79

Gloria in Excelsis Deo – Luke 2:14

The Song of Simeon: *Nunc Dimittis* – Luke 2:28-32

John 1:1-18

Philippians 2:5-11

Colossians 1:15-20: This is thought to have been an early Christian hymn on the supremacy of Christ, used by Paul to counteract false teaching at Colosse. The Church was around 30 years old when Colossians was written, so Christian worship had been developing for some time. The Church was still without the New Testament, and increasingly geographically scattered. Components used in worship played an important role in laying the theological foundation the young but growing Christian movement needed in its worship and to protect it from error. Some of the most important doctrines were expressed in hymns. Colossians 3:16 suggests that some of the Old Testament psalms, liturgical elements from temple and synagogue worship, had been put to music by the Church and used in her worship.

Revelation 4:8-11

Revelation 5:8-14

Revelation 7:9-17

Revelation 15:2-4

Revelation 19:6-8

³⁵ *Worship Old & New*, Webber, page 43.

PART V: SONGS OF THE CHURCH

Article 22: The *Gloria*

3rd century

In early Christian worship, as the order of service was developing, there was the sense that one of the opening components to worship should be worshippers acknowledging God for who he is. One major expression of this became the outburst of the angels announcing Jesus' birth: "Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace to men on whom his favor rests" (Luke 2:14).

This hymn is now known as the *Gloria in Excelsis Deo*, or simply the *Gloria*. It originated in the first three centuries of Christian worship and was frequently used until the 11th century when it became fixed in the Church's worship. It has been found in 341 medieval manuscripts, with 56 different melodies.³⁶ It is a marvelous hymn, especially for its theology extolling the position of Jesus in the Godhead. In today's worship renewal it is experiencing a remarkable recovery.

Glory to God in the highest,
and peace to his people on earth.

Lord God, heavenly King,
almighty God and Father,
we worship you, we give you thanks,
we praise you for your glory.

Lord Jesus Christ, only Son of the Father,
Lord God, Lamb of God,
you take away the sin of the world:
have mercy on us;
you are seated at the right hand of the Father:
receive our prayer.

For you alone are the Holy One,
you alone are the Lord,
you alone are the Most High,

Jesus Christ,
with the Holy Spirit,
in the glory of God the Father. Amen.³⁷

³⁶ Webber, *Worship: New and Old*, p. 157.

³⁷ *Book of Common Prayer*, 1979, p. 356. Recording: *Rediscovered Masterpieces*, V. III.

Article 23: Sanctus

4th century, perhaps earlier

The *Sanctus* is found in Christian liturgies that date back to the 4th century, but it may be older. Scholars have suggested that it is derived from the *Kedusha* used in the Jewish synagogue liturgy. That the wording is almost identical with Isaiah 6:3 and Psalm 118:26 underscores the possibility of its having Jewish origins. It also strongly reminds us of the worship recorded in Revelation 4:8.

The words "Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord!" "Hosanna in the highest!" were the very words shouted by the Jewish crowds as Jesus entered Jerusalem five days before he was crucified (Matthew 21:9). They are pregnant with prophetic significance. Jesus, speaking to Jerusalem, said the city would not see him again until it sang out these words (Luke 13:34-35). Scripture tells us that, when Jesus returns, his feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, east of Jerusalem (Zechariah 14:4). Paul, writing under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, assures us that "all Israel will be saved" (Romans 11:26). In your imagination, picture the people of Israel crying out "Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord", resulting in the return of the Messiah to earth.

The *Sanctus* has traditionally been positioned in Christian worship as part of the service of the Eucharist (Communion, Lord's Supper), when the people of God draw intimately near to Jesus through the bread and wine. How appropriate for these sacred words to be sung on this occasion.

Holy, holy, holy Lord, God of power and might,
heaven and earth are full of your glory.

Hosanna in the highest.

Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord.

Hosanna in the highest.³⁸

³⁸ *Book of Common Prayer*, 1979, p. 362. Recording: *Rediscovered Masterpieces*, Vol. II.

Article 24: Redeemer of the Nations, Come

Ambrose of Milan (340-397) – A Hymn for Advent³⁹

1 Redeemer of the nations, come;
reveal yourself in virgin birth,
the birth which ages all adore,
a wondrous birth, befitting God.

2 From human will you do not spring,
but from the Spirit of our God;
O Word of God, come; take our flesh
and grow as child in Mary's womb.

3 You came forth from the eternal God.
and you returned to that same source.
You suffered death and harrowed hell,
and reigned once more from God's
high throne.

4 With God the Father you are one,
and one with us in human flesh.
Oh, fill our weak and dying frame
with godly strength which never fails.

5 Your cradle shines with glory's light;
its splendor pierces all our gloom.
Our faith reflects those radiant beams;
no night shall overcome it now.

6 All praise, O unbegotten God,
all praise to you, eternal Word,
all praise, life-giving Spirit, praise,
all glory to our God Triune.

³⁹ *The Episcopal Hymnal 1982*, 55, Words:, Att. Ambrose of Milan (340-397); tr. Charles P. Price (b. 1920).

Music: *Veni Redemptor gentium*, plainsong, Mode 1, Einsiedeln MS., 12th cent.

Taken from *The Episcopal Hymnal 1982*, no. 55.

Article 25: Be Thou My Vision⁴⁰

Irish (ca. 700)

Be thou my vision, O Lord of my heart;
all else be nought to me, save that thou art –
thou my best thought, by day or by night,
waking or sleeping, thy presence my light.

Be thou my wisdom, and thou my true word;
I ever with thee and thou with me, Lord;
thou my great Father; thine own may I be;
thou in me dwelling, and I one with thee.

High King of heaven, when victory is won,
may I reach heaven's joys, bright heaven's Sun!
Heart of my heart, whatever befall,
still be my vision, O Ruler of all.

⁴⁰ *The Episcopal Hymnal 1982*, no. 488, Words: Irish, c. 700; versified Mary Elizabeth Byrne (1880-1931). tr. Eleanor H. Hull (1860-1935), alt. Music: Slane, Irish ballad melody; adapt. *The Church Hymnary*, 1927.

Article 26: O Sacred Head, Now Wounded⁴¹

1 O Sacred Head, now wounded,
 With grief and shame weighed down;
 Now scornfully surrounded
 With thorns, Thine only crown;
 O Sacred Head, what glory,
 What bliss till now was Thine!
 Yet, though despised and gory,
 I joy to call Thee mine!

2 O noblest brow and dearest,
 In other days the world
 All feared when Thou appearedst;
 What shame on Thee is hurled!
 How art Thou pale with anguish,
 With sore abuse and scorn;
 How does that visage languish,
 Which once was bright as morn!

3 What Thou, my Lord, hast suffered
 Was all for sinners' gain;
 Mine, mine was the transgression,
 But Thine the deadly pain.
 Lo, here I fall, my Savior,
 'Tis I deserve Thy place;
 Look on me with Thy favor,
 Vouchsafe to me Thy grace.

4 What language shall I borrow
 To thank Thee, dearest Friend,
 For this: Thy dying sorrow,
 Thy pity without end?
 O make me Thine forever;
 And should I fainting be,
 Lord, let me never, never
 Outlive my love to Thee.

5 And when I am departing,
 O part not Thou from me!
 When mortal pangs are darting,
 Come, Lord, and set me free!
 And when my heart must languish
 Amidst the final throes,
 Release me from mine anguish
 By Thine own pain and woe.

6 Be near when I am dying,
 O show Thy cross to me;
 And for my succor flying,
 Come, Lord, to set me free:
 These eyes, new faith receiving,
 From Jesus shall not move;
 For He who dies believing
 Dies safely, through Thy love.

⁴¹ Latin original sometimes ascribed to Bernard of Clairvaux (1091-1153) but more likely from the pen of Arnulf von Loewen (1200-1250). Translated to the German by Paul Gerhardt (1607-1767) and to English by James W. Alexander (1804-1859).

Article 27: All Creatures of Our God and King⁴²

Francis of Assisi (1182-1226)

1 All creatures of our God and King,
lift up your voices, let us sing:
Alleluia, alleluia!

Bright burning sun with golden beams,
pale silver moon that gently gleams,
O praise him, O praise him,
Alleluia, alleluia, alleluia!

2 Great rushing winds and breezes soft,
you clouds that ride the heavens aloft,
O praise Him, Alleluia!

Fair rising morn, with praise rejoice,
stars nightly shining, find a voice,
O praise him, O praise him,
Alleluia, alleluia, alleluia!

3 Swift flowing water, pure and clear,
make music for your Lord to hear,
Alleluia, alleluia!

Fire, so intense and fiercely bright,
you give to us both warmth and light,
O praise him, O praise him,
Alleluia, alleluia, alleluia!

4 Dear mother earth, you day by day
unfold your blessings on our way,
O praise him, Alleluia!

All flowers and fruits that in you grow,
let them his glory also show:
O praise him, O praise him,
Alleluia, alleluia, alleluia!

5 All you with mercy in your heart,
forgiving others, take your part,
O sing now: Alleluia!

All you that pain and sorrow bear,
praise God, and cast on him your care:
O praise him, O praise him,
Alleluia, alleluia, alleluia!

6 And even you, most gentle death,
waiting to hush our final breath,
O praise him, Alleluia!

You lead back home the child of God,
for Christ our Lord that way has trod:
O praise him, O praise Him,
Alleluia, alleluia, alleluia!

7 Let all things their creator bless,
and worship him in humbleness,
O praise him, Alleluia!

Praise God the Father, praise the Son,
and praise the Spirit, Three in One:
O praise him, O praise him,
Alleluia, alleluia, alleluia!

⁴² *The Episcopal Hymnal 1982*, no. 400, Words: Francis of Assisi (1182-1226); tr. William H. Draper (1855-1933), alt. Music: *Lasst uns erfreuen*, melody from Auserlesene Catholische Geistliche Kurchengesang, 1623 Recording: The Shadow of Your Wings: Fernando Ortega – verses 1,2,5,7.

Article 28: O God, Our Help in Ages Past⁴³

Isaac Watts (1674-1748) – paraphrase of Psalm 90:1-5

1 O God, our help in ages past,
Our hope for years to come,
Our shelter from the stormy blast,
And our eternal home:

4 A thousand ages in thy sight
Are like an evening gone;
Short as the watch that ends the night
Before the rising sun.

2 Under the shadow of thy throne
Thy saints have dwelt secure;
Sufficient is thine arm alone,
And our defense is sure.

5 Time, like an ever-rolling stream,
Bears all our years away;
They fly, forgotten, as a dream
Dies at the opening day.

3 Before the hills in order stood,
Or earth received her frame,
From everlasting thou art God,
To endless years the same.

6 O God, our help in ages past,
Our hope for years to come,
Be thou our guide while life shall last,
And our eternal home.

⁴³ *The Episcopal Hymnal 1982*, no. 680, Words: Isaac Watts (1674-1748), alt; para. of Psalm 90:1-5. Music: St. Anne, melody att. William Croft (1678-1727), alt., harm. William Henry Monk (1823-1889), alt. Recording: Crown Him – Paul Leddington Wright - Coventry Cathedral.

PART VI: JESUS OF NAZARETH: WHO IS
HE?

Article 29: Jesus Came In Fulfillment Of Prophecy

Matthew 1:18, 22-23 – This is how the birth of Jesus Christ came about: his mother Mary was pledged to be married to Joseph, but before they came together, she was found to be with child through the Holy Spirit... this took place to fulfill what the Lord had said through the prophet: “The virgin will be with child and will give birth to a son, and they will call him Immanuel”... “God with us.” (*Isaiah 7:14*)

Matthew 2:3-6 – When King Herod heard this he was disturbed, and all Jerusalem with him. When he had called together all the people’s chief priests and teachers of the law, he asked them where the Christ was to be born. “In Bethlehem in Judea,” they replied, “for this is what the prophet has written: ‘But you, Bethlehem, in the land of Judah, are by no means least among the rulers of Judah; for out of you will come a ruler who will be the shepherd of my people Israel.’” (*Micah 5:2*)

Matthew 3:1-3 – In those days John the Baptist came, preaching in the Desert of Judea and saying, “Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near.” This is he who was spoken of through the prophet Isaiah: “A voice of one calling in the desert, ‘Prepare the way for the Lord, make straight paths for him.’” (*Isaiah 40:1-3*)

Matthew 4:13-16 – Leaving Nazareth, he went and lived in Capernaum, which was by the lake in the area of Zebulum and Naphtali—to fulfill what was said through the prophet Isaiah: “Land of Zebulum and land of Naphtali, the way to the sea, along the Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles—the people living in darkness have seen a great light; on those living in the land of the shadow of death a light has dawned.” (*Isaiah 9:1-2*)

Matthew 8:16-17 – When evening came, many who were demon-possessed were brought to him, and he drove out the spirits with a word and healed all the sick. This was to fulfill what was spoken through the prophet Isaiah: “He took up our infirmities and carried our diseases.” (*Isaiah 53:4*)

Matthew 10:34-36 – “Do not suppose that I have come to bring peace to the earth. I did not come to bring peace, but a sword. For I have come to turn ‘a man against his father, a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law—a man’s enemies will be the members of his own household.’” (*Micah 7:6*)

Matthew 12:17-21 – This was to fulfill what was spoken through the prophet Isaiah: “Here is my servant whom I have chosen, the one I love, in whom I delight; I will put my Spirit on him, and he will proclaim justice to the nations. He will not quarrel or cry out; no one will hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed he will not break, and a smoldering wick he will not snuff out, til he leads justice to victory. In his name the nations will put their hope.” (*Isaiah 42:1-4*)

Matthew 26:31 – Then Jesus told them, “This very night you will all fall away on account of me, for it is written: “I will strike the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock will be scattered.” (*Zechariah 13:7*)

Luke 4:16-21 – He went to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and on the Sabbath day he went into the synagogue, as was his custom. And he stood up to read. The scroll of the prophet Isaiah was handed to him. Unrolling it, he found the place where it is written: “The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor. He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to release the oppressed, to proclaim the year of the Lord’s favor.” Then he rolled up the scroll, gave it back

to the attendant and sat down. The eyes of everyone in the synagogue were fastened on him, and he began by saying to them, "Today this scripture is fulfilled in your hearing." (*Isaiah 61:1-2*)

Luke 22:20 – In the same way, after the supper he took the cup, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in my blood..." (*Jeremiah 31:31-34*)

John 12:12-15 – The next day the great crowd that had come for the Feast heard that Jesus was on his way to Jerusalem. They took palm branches and went out to meet him, shouting, "Hosanna!" "Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord!" "Blessed is the King of Israel!" Jesus found a young donkey and sat upon it, as it is written, "do not be afraid, O Daughter of Zion; see, your king is coming, seated on a donkey's colt." (*Psalms 118:26; Zechariah 9:9*)

Hebrews 1:1-2 – In the past God spoke to our forefathers through the prophets at many times and in various ways, but in these last days he has spoken to us by his Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom he made the universe.

Revelation 19:9-10 – Then the angel said to me, "Write: 'Blessed are those who are invited to the wedding supper of the Lamb!'" And he added, "These are the true words of God." At this I fell at his feet to worship him. But he said to me, "Do not do it! I am a fellow servant with you and with your brothers who hold to the testimony of Jesus. Worship God! For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy."

Matthew 27:46, 50-51, 54 – About the ninth hour Jesus cried out in a loud voice, "Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?"—which means, "My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?" (*Psalms 22:1*).... And when Jesus had cried out again in a loud voice, he gave up his spirit. At that moment the curtain of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom. The earth shook and the rocks split.... When the centurion and those with him who were guarding Jesus saw the earthquake and all that had happened, they were terrified, and exclaimed, "Surely he was the Son of God!"

Isaiah 53:5-6 – But he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was upon him, and by his wounds we are healed. We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all.

Article 30: Jesus Is Unique

Matthew 2:1-2 – After Jesus was born in Bethlehem...during the time of King Herod, Magi from the east came to Jerusalem and asked, “Where is the one who has been born king of the Jews? We saw his star in the east and have come to worship him.”

Matthew 4:19-20 – “Come, follow me,” Jesus said, “and I will make you fishers of men.” At once they left their nets and followed him.

Matthew 4:24 – News about him spread all over Syria, and people brought to him all who were ill with various diseases, those suffering severe pain, the demon-possessed, those having seizures, and the paralyzed, and he healed them.

Matthew 7:28-29 – When Jesus had finished saying these things, the crowds were amazed at his teaching, because he taught as one who had authority, and not as their teachers of the law.

Matthew 8:25-27 – The disciples...woke him, saying, “Lord, save us! We are going to drown!” He replied, “You of little faith, why are you so afraid?” Then he got up and rebuked the winds and the waves, and it was completely calm. The men were amazed and asked, “What kind of man is this? Even the winds and the waves obey him!”

Matthew 9:32-34 – While they were going out, a man who was demon-possessed and could not talk was brought to Jesus. And when the demon was driven out, the man who had been mute spoke. The crowd was amazed and said, “Nothing like this has ever been seen in Israel.” But the Pharisees said, “It is by the prince of demons that he drives out demons.”

Matthew 16:13-14 – When Jesus came to the region of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, “Who do people say the Son of Man is?” They replied, “Some say John the Baptist; others say Elijah; and still others, Jeremiah or one of the prophets.”

Matthew 21:8-9 – A very large crowd spread their cloaks on the road, while others cut branches from the trees and spread them on the road. The crowds that went ahead of him and those that followed shouted, “Hosanna to the Son of David!” “Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord!” “Hosanna in the highest!”

Matthew 27:19 – While Pilate was sitting on the judge’s seat, his wife sent him this message: “Don’t have anything to do with that innocent man, for I have suffered a great deal today in a dream because of him.”

Mark 2:10-12 – “But that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins...” He said to the paralytic, “I tell you, get up, take your mat and go home.” He got up, took his mat and walked out in full view of them all. This amazed everyone and they praised God, saying, “We have never seen anything like this!”

Mark 6:2 – When the Sabbath came, he began to teach in the synagogue, and many who heard him were amazed. “Where did this man get these things?” they asked. “What’s this wisdom that has been given him, that he even does miracles!”

Mark 15:38-39 – The curtain of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom. And when the centurion, who stood there in front of Jesus, heard his cry and saw how he died, he said, “Surely this man was the Son of God!”

Luke 2:42, 46-47 – When he was twelve years old, they went up to the Feast, according to the custom...After three days they found him in the temple courts, sitting among the teachers, listening to them and asking them questions. Everyone who heard him was amazed at his understanding and his answers.

Luke 23:3-4 – So Pilate asked Jesus, “Are you the king of the Jews?” “Yes, it is as you say,” Jesus replied. Then Pilate announced to the chief priests and the crowd, “I find no basis for a charge against this man.”

Luke 24:30-32 – ...at the table with them, he took bread, gave thanks, broke it and began to give it to them. Then their eyes were opened and they recognized him, and he disappeared from their sight. They asked each other, “Were not our hearts burning within us while he talked with us on the road and opened the Scriptures to us?”

John 1:1, 14 – In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.... The Word became flesh and lived for a while among us. We have seen his glory....

John 1:45-46 – Philip found Nathanael and told him, “We have found the one Moses wrote about in the Law, about whom the prophets also wrote—Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. “Nazareth! Can anything good come from there?” Nathanael asked. “Come and see,” said Phillip.

John 4:28-29 – Then, leaving her water jar, the woman went back to the town and said to the people, “Come, see a man who told me everything I ever did. Could this be the Christ?”

John 7:40-43 – On hearing his words, some of the people said, “Surely this man is the Prophet.” Others said, “He is the Christ.” Still others asked, “How can the Christ come from Galilee? Does not the Scripture say that the Christ will come from David’s family and from Bethlehem, the town where David lived?” Thus the people were divided because of Jesus.

John 9:24-25 – A second time they summoned the man who had been blind. “Give glory to God,” they said. “We know this man is a sinner.” He replied, “Whether he is a sinner or not, I don’t know. One thing I do know. I was blind but now I see!”

John 20:30-31 – Jesus did many other miraculous signs in the presence of his disciples, which are not recorded in this book. But these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that by believing you may have life in his name.

John 21:25 – Jesus did many other things as well. If every one of them were written down, I suppose that even the whole world would not have room for the books that would be written.

Article 31: Jesus Is God

Isaiah 9:6 – For to us a child is born, to us a son is given, and the government will be on his shoulders. And he will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God...

Micah 5:2 – “But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though you are small among the clans of Judah, out of you will come for me one who will be ruler over Israel, whose origins are from old, from ancient times.”

John 8:56-59 – “Your father Abraham rejoiced at the thought of seeing my day; he saw it and was glad.” “You are not yet fifty years old,” the Jews said to him, “and you have seen Abraham!” “I tell you the truth,” Jesus answered, “before Abraham was born, I am!” At this, they picked up stones to stone him....

Matthew 1:22-23 – All this took place to fulfill what the Lord had said through the prophet: “The virgin will be with child and will give birth to a son, and they will call him Immanuel”—which means, “God with us.”

Luke 1:30-35 – But the angel said to her, “Do not be afraid, Mary, you have found favor with God. You will be with child and give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus. He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David, and he will reign over the house of Jacob forever; his kingdom will never end.” “How will this be,” Mary asked the angel, “since I am a virgin?” The angel answered, “The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. So the holy one to be born will be called the Son of God.”

Mathew 3:16-17 – As soon as Jesus was baptized, he went up out of the water. At that moment heaven was opened, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and lighting on him. And a voice from heaven said, “This is my Son, whom I love: with him I am well pleased.”

John 5:18 – For this reason the Jews tried all the harder to kill him; not only was he breaking the Sabbath, but he was even calling God his own Father, making himself equal with God.

Matthew 9:2-8 – ...When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the paralytic, “Take heart, son; your sins are forgiven.” At this, some of the teachers of the law said to themselves, “This fellow is blaspheming!” Knowing their thoughts, Jesus said, “... Which is easier: to say, ‘Your sins are forgiven,’ or to say, ‘Get up and walk’? But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins...” Then he said to the paralytic, “Get up, take your mat and go home.” And the man got up and went home. When the crowd saw this, they were filled with awe....

Matthew 16:13, 16-17 – When Jesus came to the region of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, “Who do people say the Son of Man is?”... Simon Peter answered, “You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.” Jesus replied, “Blessed you are, Simon son of Jonah, for this was not revealed to you by man, but by my Father in heaven.”

Matthew 27:54 – When the centurion and those with him who were guarding Jesus saw the earthquake and all that had happened, they were terrified, and exclaimed, “Surely he was the Son of God.”

Matthew 28:19 – Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit...”

John 1:1-3, 14 – In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made....The Word became flesh and lived for a while among us....

John 10:30 – “I and the Father are one.”

John 20:27-29 – Then he said to Thomas, “Put your finger here; see my hands. Reach out your hand and put it into my side. Stop doubting and believe.” Thomas said to him, “My Lord and my God!” Then Jesus told him, “Because you have seen me, you have believed; blessed are those who have not seen and yet have believed.”

2 Corinthians 13:14 – May the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all.

Philippians 2:9-11 – Therefore God exalted him to the highest place and gave him the name that is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Colossians 1:15-18 – He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. For by him all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things were created by him and for him. He is before all things, and in him all things hold together. And he is the head of the body, the church; he is the beginning and the firstborn from among the dead, so that in everything he might have the supremacy.

Revelation 5:11-14 – Then I looked and heard the voice of many angels, numbering thousands upon thousands, and ten thousand times ten thousand. They encircled the throne and the living creatures and the elders. In a loud voice they sang: “Worthy is the Lamb, who was slain, to receive power and wealth and wisdom and strength and honor and glory and praise!” Then I heard every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and on the sea, and all that is in them, singing: “To him who sits on the throne and to the Lamb be praise and honor and glory and power, for ever and ever!” The four living creatures said, “Amen,” and the elders fell down and worshipped.

John 20:30-31 – Jesus did many other miraculous signs in the presence of his disciples, which are not recorded in this book. But these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that by believing you may have life in his name.

Article 32: Jesus Is Man

Matthew 4:1-2 – Then Jesus was led by the Spirit into the desert to be tempted by the devil. After fasting forty days and forty nights, he was hungry.

Matthew 8:23-24 – Then he got into the boat and his disciples followed him. Without warning, a furious storm came up on the lake, so that the waves swept over the boat. But Jesus was sleeping.

Matthew 26:37-38 – He took Peter and the two sons of Zebedee along with him, and he began to be sorrowful and troubled. Then he said to them, "My soul is overwhelmed with sorrow to the point of death. Stay here and keep watch with me."

Matthew 27:46-48 – About the ninth hour Jesus cried out in a loud voice, "Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?"—which means, "My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?" When some of those standing there heard this, they said, "He's calling Elijah." Immediately one of them ran and got a sponge. He filled it with wine vinegar, put it on a stick, and offered it to Jesus to drink.

Isaiah 53:3 – He was despised and rejected by men, a man of sorrows....

Luke 2:5-7 – He went there to register with Mary, who was pledged to be married to him and was expecting a child. While they were there, the time came for the baby to be born, and she gave birth to her firstborn, a son. She wrapped him in cloths and placed him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.

Luke 2:21 – On the eighth day, when it was time to circumcise him, he was named Jesus, the name the angel had given him before he had been conceived.

Luke 9:57-58 – As they were walking along the road, a man said to him, "I will follow you wherever you go." Jesus replied, "Foxes have holes and birds of the air have nests, but the Son of Man has no place to lay his head."

Luke 22:44 – And being in anguish, he prayed more earnestly, and his sweat was like drops of blood falling to the ground.

Luke 24:39 – "Look at my hands and my feet. It is I myself! Touch me and see; a ghost does not have flesh and bones, as you see I have."

John 1:14 – The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us....

John 11:35 – Jesus wept.

John 19:5 – When Jesus came out wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe, Pilate said to them, "Here is the man!"

Romans 5:17 – For if, by the trespass of the one man, death reigned through that one man, how much more will those who receive God's abundant provision of grace and of the gift of righteousness reign in life through the one man, Jesus Christ.

Romans 8:3 – For what the law was powerless to do in that it was weakened by the sinful nature, God did by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful man to be a sin offering. And so he condemned sin in sinful man....

1 Corinthians 15:20-21 – But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep. For since death came through a man, the resurrection of the dead comes also through a man.

1 Corinthians 15:47-49 – The first man was of the dust of the earth, the second man from heaven. As was the earthly man, so are those who are of the earth; and as is the man from heaven, so also are those who are of heaven....just as we have borne the likeness of the earthly man, so shall we bear the likeness of the man from heaven.

Philippians 2:7-8 – [He] made himself nothing, taking the very nature of a servant, being made in human likeness. And being found in appearance as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient to death—even death on a cross!

Colossians 1:22 – But now he has reconciled you by Christ's physical body through death to present you holy in his sight, without blemish and free from accusation.

1 Timothy 2:5 – For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus....

Hebrews 2:14 – Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity....

Hebrews 5:8 – Although he was a son, he learned obedience from what he suffered.

Hebrews 10:5 – Therefore, when Christ came into the world, he said: "Sacrifice and offering you did not desire, but a body you prepared for me.

1 John 1:1 – That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked at and our hands have touched—this we proclaim concerning the Word of Life.

1 John 4:2 – This is how you can recognize the Spirit of God: Every spirit that acknowledges that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is from God.

2 John 7 – Many deceivers, who do not acknowledge Jesus Christ as coming in the flesh, have gone out into the world....

Daniel 7:13-14 – "In my vision at night I looked, and there before me was one like a son of man, coming with the clouds of heaven. He approached the Ancient of Days and was led into his presence. He was given authority, glory and sovereign power; all peoples, nations and men of every language worshipped him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion that will not pass away...."

Article 33: Jesus Is Savior

Matthew 1:20-21 – But after he had considered this, an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream and said, “Joseph son of David, do not be afraid to take Mary home as your wife, because what is conceived in her is from the Holy Spirit. She will give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus, because he will save his people from their sins.”

Luke 2:10-11 – But the angel said to them, “Do not be afraid. I bring you good news of great joy that will be for all the people. Today in the town of David a Savior has been born to you; he is Christ the Lord.”

Luke 5:24-25 – “But that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins...” He said to the paralyzed man, “I tell you, get up, take your mat and go home.” Immediately he stood up in front of them, took what he had been lying on and went home praising God.

Luke 19:9-10 – Jesus said to him, “Today salvation has come to this house, because his man, too, is a son of Abraham. For the Son of Man came to seek and to save what was lost.”

Luke 23:39-43 – One of the criminals who hung there hurled insults at him: “Aren’t you the Christ? Save yourself and us!” But the other criminal rebuked him. “Don’t you fear God,” he said, “since you are under the same sentence? We are punished justly, for we are getting what our deeds deserve. But this man has done nothing wrong. Then he said, “Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom.” Jesus answered him, “I tell you the truth, today you will be with me in paradise.”

John 3:16-17 – “For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life. For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save it.”

John 4:42 – They said to the woman, “We no longer believe just because of what you said; now we have heard for ourselves, and we know that this man really is the Savior of the world.

John 5:25-27 – “I tell you the truth, a time is coming and has now come when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God and those who hear will live. For as the Father has life in himself, so he has granted the Son to have life in himself. And he has given him authority to judge because he is the Son of Man.”

John 6:38-40 – “For I have come down from heaven not to do my will but to do the will of him who sent me. And this is the will of him who sent me, that I shall lose none of all that he has given me, but raise them up at the last day. For my Father’s will is that everyone who looks to the Son and believes in him shall have eternal life....”

John 10:7, 9 – Therefore Jesus said again, “.... I am the gate: whoever enters through me will be saved. He will come in and go out, and find pasture.”

John 11:21-27 – “Lord,” Martha said to Jesus, “if you had been here, my brother would not have died. But I know that even now God will give you whatever you ask.” Jesus said to her, “Your brother will rise again.” Martha answered, “I know he will rise again in the resurrection at the last day.” Jesus said to her, “I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in me will live, even though he dies; and whoever lives and believes in me will never die. Do you believe

this?" "Yes, Lord," she told him, "I believe that you are the Christ, the Son of God, who was to come into the world."

John 12:47 – "As for the person who hears my words but does not keep them, I do not judge him. For I did not come to judge the world, but to save it."

Acts 5:30-31 – "The God of our fathers raised Jesus from the dead—whom you had killed by hanging him on a tree. God exalted him to his own right hand as Prince and Savior that he might give repentance and forgiveness of sins to Israel."

Acts 13:23 – "From this man's descendants God has brought to Israel the Savior Jesus, as he promised."

Philippians 3:20 – But our citizenship is in heaven. And we eagerly await a Savior from there, the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 Timothy 1:10 – But it has now been revealed through the appearing of our Savior, Christ Jesus, who has destroyed death and has brought life and immortality to light through the gospel.

Titus 1:4 – To Titus, my true son in our common faith: Grace and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Savior.

Titus 2:13 – ...while we wait for the blessed hope—the glorious appearing of our great God and Savior, Jesus Christ

2 Peter 1:1 – Simon Peter, a servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to those who through the righteousness of our God and Savior Jesus Christ have received a faith as precious as ours:

2 Peter 1:10-11 – Therefore, my brothers, be all the more eager to make your calling and election sure. For if you do these things, you will never fall, and you will receive a rich welcome into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

2 Peter 3:18 – But grow in grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and forever! Amen.

1 John 4:14 – And we have seen and testify that the Father has sent his Son to be the Savior of the world.

Revelation 7:9-10 – After this I looked and there before me was a great multitude that no one could count, from every nation, tribe, people and language, standing before the throne and in front of the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and were holding palm branches in their hands. And they cried out in a loud voice: "Salvation belongs to our God, who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb."

Article 34: Jesus Is Teacher

Matthew 4:23 – Jesus went throughout Galilee, teaching in their synagogues....

Matthew 5:1-2 – Now when he saw the crowds, he went up on a mountainside and sat down. His disciples came to him, and he began to teach them, saying:

Matthew 7:24-27 – “Therefore everyone who hears these words of mine and puts them into practice is like a wise man who built his house on the rock. The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house; yet it did not fall, because it had its foundation on the rock. But everyone who hears these words of mine and does not put them into practice is like a foolish man who built his house on sand. The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house, and it fell with a great crash.”

Matthew 7:28-29 – When Jesus had finished saying these things, the crowds were amazed at his teaching, because he taught as one who had authority, and not as their teachers of the law.

Matthew 9:35 – Jesus went through all the towns and villages, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the good news of the kingdom and healing every disease and sickness.

Matthew 11:1 – After Jesus had finished instructing his twelve disciples, he went on from there to teach and preach in the towns of Galilee.

Matthew 11:28-29 – “Come to me, all you who are weary and burdened, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls.”

Matthew 13:54 – Coming to his home town, he began teaching the people in their synagogue, and they were amazed. “Where did this man get this wisdom and these miraculous powers?” they asked.

Matthew 21:23 – Jesus entered the temple courts, and while he was teaching, the chief priests and the elders of the people came to him. “By what authority are you doing these things?” they asked. “And who gave you this authority?”

Mark 10:17 – As Jesus started on his way, a man ran up to him and fell on his knees before him. “Good teacher,” he asked, “what must I do to inherit eternal life?”

Mark 14:48-49 – “Am I leading a rebellion,” said Jesus, “that you have come out with swords and clubs to capture me? Every day I was with you, teaching in the temple courts, and you did not arrest me. But the Scriptures must be fulfilled.”

Luke 4:14-15 – Jesus returned to Galilee in the power of the Spirit, and news about him spread through the whole countryside. He taught in their synagogues, and everyone praised him.

Luke 11:31 – “The Queen of the South will rise at the judgment with the men of this generation and condemn them, for she came from the ends of the earth to listen to Solomon’s wisdom, and now one greater than Solomon is here.”

Luke 13:22 – Then Jesus went through the towns and villages, teaching as he made his way to Jerusalem.

John 3:1-2 – Now there was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a member of the Jewish ruling council. He came to Jesus at night and said, “Rabbi, we know you are a teacher

who has come from God. For no one could perform the miraculous signs you are doing if God were not with him."

John 7:14-16 – Not until halfway through the Feast did Jesus go up to the temple courts and begin to teach. The Jews were amazed and asked, "How did this man get such learning without having studied?" Jesus answered, "My teaching is not my own. It comes from him who sent me."

John 13:13 – "You call me 'Teacher' and 'Lord,' and rightly so, for that is what I am."

John 18:19-21 – Meanwhile, the high priest questioned Jesus about his disciples and his teaching. "I have spoken openly to the world," Jesus replied. "I always taught in synagogues or at the temple, where all the Jews come together. I said nothing in secret. Why question me? Ask those who heard me. Surely they know what I said."

John 20:15-16 – "Woman," he said, "why are you crying? Who is it you are looking for?" Thinking he was the gardener, she said, "Sir, if you have carried him away, tell me where you have put him, and I will get him." Jesus said to her, "Mary." She turned toward him and cried out in Aramaic, "Rabboni!" (which means Teacher).

Acts 1:1 – In my former book, *Theophilus*, I wrote about all that Jesus began to do and to teach.

Colossians 2:2-3 – ...in order that they may know the mystery of God, namely, Christ, in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

Colossians 3:16 – Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly as you teach and admonish one another with all wisdom, and as you sing psalms, hymns and spiritual songs with gratitude in your hearts to God.

Luke 24:25-27 – He said to them, "How foolish you are, and how slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken! Did not the Christ have to suffer these things and then enter his glory?" And beginning with Moses and all the Prophets, he explained to them what was said in all the Scriptures concerning himself.

Luke 24:44-45 – He said to them, "This is what I told you while I was still with you: Everything must be fulfilled that is written about me in the Law of Moses, the Prophets and the Psalms." Then he opened their minds so they could understand the Scriptures.

John 6:68 – Simon Peter answered him, "Lord, to whom shall we go? You have the words of eternal life."

Article 35: Jesus Is Lord

Luke 1:41-43 – When Elizabeth heard Mary’s greeting, the baby leaped in her womb, and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit. In a loud voice she exclaimed: “Blessed are you among women, and blessed is the child you will bear! But why am I so favored, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?”

Luke 2:10-11 – But the angel said to them, “Do not be afraid. I bring you good news of great joy that will be for all the people. Today in the town of David a Savior has been born to you: he is Christ the Lord.”

Matthew 8:2 – A man with leprosy came and knelt before him and said, “Lord, if you are willing, you can make me clean.”

Matthew 8:5-10 – When Jesus had entered Capernaum, a centurion came to him, asking for help. “Lord,” he said, “my servant lies at home paralyzed and in terrible suffering.” Jesus said to him, “I will go and heal him.” The centurion replied, “Lord, I do not deserve to have you come under my roof. But just say the word, and my servant will be healed. For I myself am a man under authority, with soldiers under me. I tell this one, ‘Go,’ and he goes; and that one, ‘Come,’ and he comes. I say to my servant, ‘Do this,’ and he does it. When Jesus heard this, he was astonished and said to those following him, “I tell you the truth, I have not found anyone in Israel with such great faith.”

Matthew 8:23-25 – Then he got into the boat and his disciples followed him. Without warning, a furious storm came up on the lake, so that the waves swept over the boat. But Jesus was sleeping. The disciples went and woke him, saying, “Lord, save us! We are going to drown!”

Matthew 12:7-8 – “If you had known what these words mean, ‘I desire mercy, not sacrifice,’ you would not have condemned the innocent. For the Son of Man is Lord of the Sabbath.”

Mark 11:1-3 – As they approached Jerusalem and came to Bethphage and Bethany at the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent two of his disciples, saying to them, “Go to the village ahead of you, and just as you enter it, you will find a colt tied there, which no one has ever ridden. Untie it and bring it here. If anyone asks you, ‘Why are you doing this?’ tell him, ‘The Lord needs it and will send it back here shortly.’”

John 20:1-2 – Early on the first day of the week, while it was still dark, Mary of Magdala went to the tomb and saw that the stone had been removed from the entrance. So she came running to Simon Peter and the other disciple, the one Jesus loved, and said, “They have taken the Lord out of the tomb, and we don’t know where they have put him!”

John 20:19-20 – On the evening of that first day of the week, when the disciples were together, with the doors locked for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood among them and said, “Peace be with you!” After he said this, he showed them his hands and side. The disciples were overjoyed when they saw the Lord.

John 21:4-7 – Early in the morning, Jesus stood on the shore, but the disciples did not realize that it was Jesus. He called out to them, “Friends, haven’t you any fish?” “No,” they answered. He said, “Throw your net on the right side of the boat and you will find some.” When they did, they were unable to haul the net in because of the large number of fish. Then the disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter: “It is the Lord!”...

John 21:17 – The third time he said to him, “Simon son of John, do you love me?” Peter was hurt because Jesus asked him the third time, “Do you love me?” He said, “Lord, you know all things; you know that I love you.” Jesus said, “Feed my sheep.”

Acts 1:6 – So when they met together, they asked him, “Lord are you at this time going to restore the kingdom to Israel?”

Acts 2:34-36 – “For David did not ascend to heaven, and yet he said, ‘The Lord said to my Lord: “Sit at my right hand until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet.’” Therefore let all Israel be assured of this: God has made this Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Christ.” (*Psalm 110:1*)

Acts 9:3-5 – As he neared Damascus on his journey, suddenly a light from heaven flashed around him. He fell to the ground and heard a voice say to him, “Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?” “Who are you, Lord?” Saul asked. “I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting.”

Romans 1:1-4 – Paul, a servant of Christ Jesus, called to be an apostle and set apart for the gospel of God—the gospel he promised beforehand through his prophets in the Holy Scriptures regarding his Son, who as to his human nature was a descendent of David, and who through the Spirit of holiness was declared with power to be the Son of God by his resurrection from the dead: Jesus Christ our Lord.

Galatians 6:14 – May I never boast except in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, through which the world has been crucified to me, and I to the world.

James 1:1 – James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ....

Jude 24-25 – To him who is able to keep you from falling and to present you before his glorious presence without fault and with great joy—to the only God our Savior be glory, majesty, power and authority, through Jesus Christ our Lord, before all ages, now and forevermore! Amen.

Revelation 19:11-16 – I saw heaven standing open and there before me was a white horse, whose rider is called Faithful and True. With justice he judges and makes war. His eyes are like blazing fire, and on his head are many crowns. He has a name written on him that no one but he himself knows. He is dressed in a robe dipped in blood, and his name is the Word of God. The armies of heaven were following him, riding on white horses and dressed in fine linen, white and clean. Out of his mouth comes a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations. “He will rule them with an iron scepter.” He treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God Almighty. On his robe and on his thigh he has this name written: KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS

Revelation 22:20-21 – He who testifies to these things says, “Yes, I am coming soon.” Amen. Come, Lord Jesus. The grace of the Lord Jesus be with God’s people. Amen.

Article 36: Jesus Is King

Genesis 49:1, 10 – Then Jacob called for his sons and said: “Gather around so I can tell you what will happen to you in days to come.... The scepter will not depart from Judah, nor the ruler’s staff from between his feet, until he comes to whom it belongs and the obedience of the nations is his.”

2 Samuel 7:4-5, 12, 15-16 – That night the word of the LORD came to Nathan, saying: “Go and tell my servant David, ‘This is what the LORD says.... When your days are over and you rest with your fathers, I will raise up your offspring to succeed you, who will come from your own body, and I will establish his kingdom.... But my love will never be taken away from him, as I took it away from Saul, whom I removed from before you. Your house and your kingdom will endure forever before me; your throne will be established forever.’”

Psalms 89:3-4 – You said, “I have made a covenant with my chosen one, I have sworn to David my servant, ‘I will establish your line forever and make your throne firm through all generations.’”

Isaiah 9:7 – Of the increase of his government and peace there will be no end. He will reign on David’s throne and over his kingdom, establishing and upholding it with justice and righteousness from that time on and forever....

Daniel 7:13-14 – “In my vision at night I looked, and there before me was one like a son of man, coming with the clouds of heaven. He approached the Ancient of Days and was led into his presence. He was given authority, glory and sovereign power; all peoples, nations and men of every language worshipped him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion that will not pass away, and his kingdom is one that will never be destroyed.”

Micah 5:2 – “But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though you are small among the clans of Judah, out of you will come for me one who will be ruler over Israel, whose origins are from old, from ancient times.”

Matthew 1:1 – A record of the genealogy of Jesus Christ the son of David, the son of Abraham.

Matthew 2:1-2 – After Jesus was born in Bethlehem...during the time of King Herod, Magi from the east came to Jerusalem and asked, “Where is the one who has been born king of the Jews? We saw his star in the east and have come to worship him.”

Matthew 4:17 – From that time on Jesus began to preach, “Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near.”

Luke 23:42-43 – Then he said, “Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom.” Jesus answered him, “I tell you the truth, today you will be with me in paradise.”

John 1:49-50 – Then Nathanael declared, “Rabbi, you are the Son of God; you are the King of Israel.” Jesus said, “You believe because I told you I saw you under the fig tree. You shall see greater things than that.”

John 12:12-15 – The next day the great crowd that had come for the Feast heard that Jesus was on his way to Jerusalem. They took palm branches and went out to meet him, shouting, “Hosanna!” “Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord!” “Blessed is the King of Israel!” Jesus found a young donkey and sat upon it, as it is written, “Do not be afraid, O Daughter of Zion; see, your king is coming, seated on a donkey’s colt.” (Psalm 118:25-26; Zechariah 9:9)

Colossians 1:13-14 – For he has rescued us from the dominion of darkness and brought us into the kingdom of the Son he loves, in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.

2 Peter 1:10-11 – Therefore, my brothers, be all the more eager to make your calling and election sure. For if you do these things, you will never fall, and you will receive a rich welcome into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

Revelation 1:4-5 – John, to the seven churches in the province of Asia: Grace and peace to you from him who is, and who was, and who is to come, and from the seven spirits before his throne, and from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler of the kings of the earth....

Revelation 1:9 – I, John, your brother and companion in the suffering and kingdom and patient endurance that are ours in Jesus, was on the island of Patmos because of the word of God and the testimony of Jesus.

Revelation 11:15 – The seventh angel sounded his trumpet, and there were loud voices in heaven, which said: "The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he will reign for ever and ever."

Revelation 19:16 – On his robe and on his thigh he has this name written: KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.

John 18:33, 36-38 – Pilate then went back inside the palace, summoned Jesus and asked him, "Are you the king of the Jews?".... Jesus said, "My kingdom is not of this world. If it were, my servants would fight to prevent my arrest by the Jews. But now my kingdom is from another place." "You are a king, then!" said Pilate. Jesus answered, "You are right in saying I am a king. In fact, for this I came into the world, to testify to the truth. Everyone on the side of truth listens to me." "What is truth?" Pilate asked. With this he went out again to the Jews and said, "I find no basis for a charge against him."

John 19:19-22 – Pilate had a notice prepared and fastened to the cross. It read: JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS. Many of the Jews read this sign, for the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city, and the sign was written in Aramaic, Latin and Greek. The chief priests of the Jews protested to Pilate, "Do not write 'The King of the Jews,' but that this man claimed to be king of the Jews." Pilate answered, "What I have written, I have written."

1 Timothy 1:17 – Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

Article 37: Jesus Is Messiah

In these passages the title "Christ" is rendered "Messiah"

Psalm 132:11 – The LORD swore an oath to David, a sure oath that he will not revoke: "One of your own descendants I will place on your throne—"

Isaiah 11:1-2 – A shoot will come up from the stump of Jesse: from his roots a Branch will bear fruit. The Spirit of the LORD will rest on him—the Spirit of wisdom and of understanding, the Spirit of counsel and of power, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord—

Jeremiah 23:5-6 – "The days are coming," declares the LORD, "when I will raise up to David a righteous Branch, a King who will reign wisely and do what is just and right in the land. In his days Judah will be saved and Israel will live in safety. This is the name by which he will be called: The LORD Our Righteousness."

Matthew 1:1-2, 6, 16 – A record of the genealogy of Jesus the Messiah.... Abraham was the father of Isaac, Isaac the father of Jacob, Jacob the father of Judah and his brothers.... and Jesse the father of King David.... and Jacob the father of Joseph, the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Messiah.

Matthew 1:18 – This is how the birth of Jesus the Messiah came about: His mother Mary was pledged to be married to Joseph, but before they came together, she was found to be with child through the Holy Spirit.

Matthew 2:3-5 – When King Herod heard this he was disturbed, and all Jerusalem with him. When he had called together all the people's chief priests and teachers of the law, he asked them where the Messiah was to be born. "In Bethlehem in Judea," they replied...."

Luke 2:25-30 – Now there was a man in Jerusalem called Simeon, who was righteous and devout. He was waiting for the consolation of Israel, and the Holy Spirit was upon him. It had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he would not die before he had seen the Lord's Messiah. Moved by the Spirit, he went into the temple courts. When the parents brought in the child Jesus to do for him what the custom of the Law required, Simeon took him in his arms and praised God, saying: "Sovereign Lord, as you have promised, you now dismiss your servant in peace. For my eyes have seen your salvation"

Matthew 16:20 – Then he warned his disciples not to tell anyone that he was the Messiah.

Matthew 24:4-5 – Jesus answered: "Watch out that no one deceives you. For many will come in my name, claiming, 'I am the Christ,' and will deceive many.

Mark 14:61-62 – But Jesus remained silent and gave no answer. Again the high priest asked him, "Are you the Messiah, the Son of the Blessed One?" "I am," said Jesus....

Luke 4:16-21 – He went to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and on the Sabbath day he went into the synagogue as was his custom. And he stood up to read. The scroll of the prophet Isaiah was handed to him. Unrolling it, he found the place where it is written: "The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor, he has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to release the oppressed, to proclaim the year of the Lord's favor." Then he rolled up the scroll, gave it back to the attendant and sat down. The eyes of everyone in the synagogue were fastened on him, and he began by saying to them, "Today this scripture is fulfilled in your hearing." (*Isaiah 61:1-2*)

Luke 24:25-27 – He said to them, “How foolish you are, and how slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken! Did not the Messiah have to suffer these things and then enter his glory?” And beginning with Moses and all the Prophets, he explained to them what was said in all the Scriptures concerning himself.

John 1:40-41 – Andrew, Simon Peter’s brother, was one of the two who heard what John had said and who had followed Jesus. The first thing Andrew did was to find his brother Simon and tell him, “We have found the Messiah....”

John 4:25-26 – The woman said, “I know that the Messiah is coming. When he comes, he will explain everything to us.”...Jesus declared, “I who speak to you am he.”

John 7:31 – Still, many in the crowd put their faith in him. They said, “When the Messiah comes, will he do more miraculous signs than this man?”

John 11:27 – “Yes, Lord,” she told him, “I believe that you are the Messiah, the Son of God, who was to come into the world.”

John 20:30-31 – Jesus did many other miraculous signs in the presence of his disciples, which are not recorded in this book. But these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Messiah, the Son of God, and that by believing you may have life in his name.

Acts 2:34-36 – “For David did not ascend to heaven, and yet he said, ‘The Lord said to my Lord: “Sit at my right hand until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet.’” Therefore let all Israel be assured of this: God has made this Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Messiah.” (*Psalm 110:1*)

Acts 18:27-28 – When Apollos wanted to go to Achaia, the brothers encouraged him and wrote to the disciples there to welcome him. On arriving, he was a great help to those who by grace had believed. For he vigorously refuted the Jews in public debate, proving from the Scriptures that Jesus was the Messiah.

I John 2:22 – Who is the liar? It is the man who denies that Jesus is the Messiah. Such a man is the antimessiah—he denies the Father and the Son.

I John 5:1 – Everyone who believes that Jesus is the Messiah is born of God, and everyone who loves the father loves his child as well.

Revelation 11:15 – The seventh angel sounded his trumpet, and there were loud voices in heaven, which said: “The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Messiah, and he will reign for ever and ever.”

Article 38: Jesus Is Bridegroom

Mark 2:18-20 – Now John’s disciples and the Pharisees were fasting. Some people came and asked Jesus, “How is it that John’s disciples and the disciples of the Pharisees are fasting, but yours are not?” Jesus answered, “How can the guests of the bridegroom fast while he is with them? They cannot, so long as they have him with them. But the time will come when the bridegroom will be taken from them, and on that day they will fast.”

John 3:27-30 – To this John replied, “...You yourselves can testify that I said, ‘I am not the Christ but am sent ahead of him.’ The bride belongs to the bridegroom. The friend who attends the bridegroom waits and listens for him, and is full of joy when he hears the bridegroom’s voice. That joy is mine, and it is now complete. He must become greater; I must become less.”

Song of Songs 5:10, 16 – My lover is radiant and ruddy, outstanding among ten thousand ...he is altogether lovely. This is my lover, this my friend, O daughters of Jerusalem.

Matthew 22:1-2 – Jesus spoke to them again in parables, saying: “The kingdom of heaven is like a king who prepared a wedding banquet for his son...”

Matthew 25:1-6 – “At that time the kingdom of heaven will be like ten virgins who took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. Five of them were foolish and five were wise. The foolish ones took their lamps but did not take any oil with them. The wise, however, took oil in jars along with their lamps. The bridegroom was a long time in coming, and they all became drowsy and fell asleep. “At midnight the cry rang out: ‘Here’s the bridegroom! Come out to meet him!’”

Song of Songs 3:11 – Come out, you daughters of Zion, and look at King Solomon wearing the crown, the crown with which his mother crowned him on the day of his wedding, the day his heart rejoiced.

Isaiah 62:5 – ...as a bridegroom rejoices over his bride, so will your God rejoice over you.

Revelation 19:7-8 – “Let us rejoice and be glad and give him glory! For the wedding of the Lamb has come, and his bride has made herself ready. Fine linen, bright and clean, was given her to wear.” (Fine linen stands for the righteous acts of the saints.)

Psalms 45:6-11 – Your throne, O God, will last for ever and ever; a scepter of justice will be the scepter of your kingdom. You love righteousness and hate wickedness; therefore God, your God, has set you above your companions by anointing you with the oil of joy... Daughters of kings are among your honored women; at your right hand is the royal bride in gold of Ophir. Listen, O daughter, consider and give ear: Forget your people and your father’s house. The king is enthralled by your beauty; honor him, for he is your lord.

Ephesians 5:31-32 – “For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh.” This is a profound mystery—but I am talking about Christ and the church.

Hosea 2:16 – “In that day,” declares the LORD, “you will call me ‘my husband’; you will no longer call me ‘my master.’”

Revelation 21:2-4 – I saw the Holy City, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride beautifully dressed for her husband. And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, “Now the dwelling of God is with men, and he will live with them. They will be his

people, and God himself will be with them and be their God. He will wipe every tear from their eyes. There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the old order of things has passed away.”

Revelation 21:9-14 – One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls full of the seven last plagues came and said to me, “Come, I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb.” And he carried me away in the Spirit to a mountain great and high, and showed me the Holy City, Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God. It shone with the glory of God, and its brilliance was like that of a very precious jewel, like a jasper, clear as crystal. It had a great, high wall with twelve gates, and with twelve angels at the gates. On the gates were written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel.... The wall of the city had twelve foundations, and on them were the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

Revelation 22:17 – The Spirit and the bride say, “Come!”...

Article 39: Jesus Is Coming Again

Daniel 7:13-14 – “In my vision at night I looked, and there before me was one like a son of man, coming with the clouds of heaven. He approached the Ancient of Days and was led into his presence. He was given authority, glory and sovereign power; all peoples, nations and men of every language worshipped him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion that will not pass away, and his kingdom is one that will never be destroyed.”

Matthew 16:27 – “For the Son of Man is going to come in his Father’s glory with his angels, and then he will reward each person according to what he has done.”

Matthew 24:30 – “At that time the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and all the nations of the earth will mourn. They will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky, with power and great glory.”

Matthew 26:63-64 – ...The high priest said to him, “I charge you under oath by the living God: Tell us if you are the Christ, the Son of God.” “Yes, it is as you say,” Jesus replied. “But I say to all of you: In the future you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Mighty One and coming on the clouds of heaven.”

Luke 12:40 – “You also must be ready, because the Son of Man will come at an hour when you do not expect him.”

John 14:1-3 – “Do not let your hearts be troubled. Trust in God; trust also in me. In my Father’s house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back and take you to be with me that you also may be where I am.”

Acts 1:9-11 – After he said this, he was taken up before their very eyes, and a cloud hid him from their sight. They were looking intently up into the sky as he was going, when suddenly two men dressed in white stood beside them. “Men of Galilee,” they said, “why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven.”

1 Corinthians 1:7 – Therefore you do not lack any spiritual gift as you eagerly wait for our Lord Jesus Christ to be revealed.

1 Corinthians 4:5 – Therefore judge nothing before the appointed time; wait till the Lord comes. He will bring to light what is hidden in darkness and will expose the motives of men’s hearts. At that time each will receive his praise from God.

Philippians 3:20 – But our citizenship is in heaven. And we eagerly await a Savior from there, the Lord Jesus Christ.

Colossians 3:4 – When Christ, who is your life, appears, then you also will appear with him in glory.

1 Thessalonians 5:23 – May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

1 Timothy 6:14 – ...to keep this commandment without spot or blame until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ,

2 Timothy 4:1 – In the presence of God and of Christ Jesus, who will judge the living and the dead, and in view of his appearing and his kingdom, I give you this charge:

Titus 2:13 – ...while we wait for the blessed hope—the glorious appearing of our great God and Savior, Jesus Christ,

Hebrews 9:28 – ...so Christ was sacrificed once to take away the sins of many people; and he will appear a second time, not to bear sin, but to bring salvation to those who are waiting for him.

James 5:7-9 – Be patient, then, brothers, until the Lord's coming. See how the farmer waits for the land to yield its valuable crop and how patient he is for the autumn and spring rains. You too, be patient and stand firm, because the Lord's coming is near. Don't grumble against each other, brothers, or you will be judged. The Judge is standing at the door!

2 Peter 3:3-4, 8-9 – First of all, you must understand that in the last days scoffers will come, scoffing and following their own evil desires. They will say, "Where is this 'coming' he promised? Ever since our fathers died, everything goes on as it has since the beginning of creation."... But do not forget this one thing, dear friends: With the Lord a day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like a day. The Lord is not slow in keeping his promise, as some understand slowness. He is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance.

1 John 3:2 – Dear friends, now we are children of God, and what we will be has not yet been made known. But we know that when he appears, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.

Jude 14-15 – Enoch, the seventh from Adam, prophesied about these men: "See, the Lord is coming with thousands upon thousands of his holy ones to judge everyone, and to convict all the ungodly of all the ungodly acts they have done in the ungodly way, and of all the harsh words ungodly sinners have spoken against him."

Revelation 1:4, 7 – John, to the seven churches in the province of Asia: Grace and peace to you from him who is, and who was, and who is to come.... Look, he is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him, even those who pierced him; and all the peoples of the earth will mourn because of him. So shall it be! Amen.

Revelation 22:20 – He who testifies to these things says, "Yes, I am coming soon." Amen. Come, Lord Jesus.

PART VII: THE LIFE AND TEACHINGS OF
JESUS OF NAZARETH

Article 40: The Kingdom of God: Jesus' Foundational Teaching, Reading 1

Matthew 3:1-2 – In those days John the Baptist came, preaching in the Desert of Judea and saying, “Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near.”

Matthew 4:17 – From that time on Jesus began to preach, “Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near.”

Matthew 4:23 – Jesus went throughout Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the good news of the kingdom, and healing every disease and sickness among the people.

Matthew 5:3 – “Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.”

Matthew 5:10 – “Blessed are those who are persecuted because of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.”

Matthew 5:11-12 – “Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of me. Rejoice and be glad, because great is your reward in heaven....”

Matthew 5:19-20 – “Anyone who breaks one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do the same will be called least in the kingdom of heaven, but whoever practices and teaches these commands will be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I tell you that unless your righteousness surpasses that of the Pharisees and the teachers of the law, you will certainly not enter the kingdom of heaven.”

Matthew 6:9-10 – “This, then, is how you should pray: ‘Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name, your kingdom come, your will be done on earth as it is in heaven....’”

Matthew 6:33 – “But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well.”

Matthew 7:21 – “Not everyone who says to me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven.”

Matthew 8:11-12 – “I say to you that many will come from the east and the west, and will take their places at the feast with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. But the subjects of the kingdom will be thrown outside into the darkness....”

Matthew 9:35 – Jesus went through all the towns and villages, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the good news of the kingdom and healing every disease....

Matthew 10:5, 7-8 – These twelve Jesus sent out with the following instructions... “As you go, preach this message: ‘The kingdom of heaven is near.’ Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received, freely give.”

Matthew 11:11 – “I tell you the truth: Among those born of women there has not risen anyone greater than John the Baptist; yet he who is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.”

Matthew 11:12 – “From the days of John the Baptist until now, the kingdom of heaven has been forcefully advancing, and forceful men lay hold of it.”

Matthew 12:25-28 – ... “Every kingdom divided against itself will be ruined.... If Satan drives out Satan, he is divided against himself. How then can his kingdom stand? And if I drive out demons by Beelzebul, by whom do your people drive them out?... But if I drive out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you.”

Matthew 13:10-13, 16-17 – The disciples came to him and asked, “Why do you speak to the people in parables?” He replied, “The knowledge of the secrets of the kingdom of heaven has been given to you, but not to them. Whoever has will be given more, and he will have an abundance. Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken from him. This is why I speak to them in parables: ‘Though seeing, they do not see; though hearing, they do not hear or understand.’... But blessed are your eyes because they see, and your ears because they hear. For I tell you the truth, many prophets and righteous men longed to see what you see but did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it.”

Matthew 13:18-19 – “Listen then to what the parable of the sower means: When anyone hears the message about the kingdom and does not understand it, the evil one comes and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is the seed sown along the path.”

Matthew 13:20-21 – “The one who received the seed that fell on rocky places is the man who hears the word and at once receives it with joy. But since he has no root, he lasts only a short time. When troubles or persecution comes because of the word, he quickly falls away.”

Matthew 13:22 – “The one who received the seed that fell among the thorns is the man who hears the word, but the worries of this life and the deceitfulness of wealth choke it, making it unfruitful.”

Matthew 13:23 – “But the one who received the seed that fell on good soil is the man who hears the word and understands it. He produces a crop, yielding a hundred, sixty or thirty times what was sown.”

Matthew 13:24-30 – Jesus told them another parable: “The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field. But while everyone was sleeping, his enemy came and sowed weeds among the wheat, and went away. When the wheat sprouted and formed heads, then the weeds also appeared. The owner’s servants came to him and said, ‘Sir, didn’t you sow good seed in your field? Where then did the weeds come from?’ ‘An enemy did this,’ he replied. The servants asked him, ‘Do you want us to go and pull them up?’ ‘No,’ he answered, ‘because while you are pulling the weeds, you may root up the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest. At that time I will tell the harvesters: First collect the weeds and tie them in bundles to be burned; then gather the wheat and bring it into my barn.’”

Article 41: The Kingdom of God: Jesus' Foundational Teaching, Reading 2

Matthew 13:31-32 – He told them another parable: “The kingdom of heaven is like a mustard seed, which a man took and planted in his field. Though it is the smallest of all your seeds, yet when it grows, it is the largest of garden plants and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and perch in its branches.”

Matthew 13:33 – He told them still another parable: “The kingdom of heaven is like yeast that a woman took and mixed into a large amount of flour until it worked all through the dough.”

Matthew 13:36-39 – ...His disciples came to him and said, “Explain to us the parable of the weeds in the field.” He answered, “The one who sowed the good seed is the Son of Man. The field is the world, and the good seed stands for the sons of the kingdom. The weeds are the sons of the evil one, and the enemy who sows them is the devil. The harvest is the end of the age, and the harvesters are the angels.”

Matthew 13:40-43 – “As the weeds are pulled up and burned in the fire, so it will be at the end of the age. The Son of Man will send out his angels, and they will weed out of his kingdom everything that causes sin and all who do evil. They will throw them into the fiery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Then the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears, let him hear.”

Matthew 13:44 – “The kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field. When a man found it, he hid it again, and then in his joy went and sold all he had and bought that field.”

Matthew 13:45-46 – “Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant looking for fine pearls. When he found one of great value, he went away and sold everything he had and bought it.”

Matthew 13:47-48 – “Once again, the kingdom of heaven is like a net that was let down into the lake and caught all kinds of fish...the fishermen pulled it up on the shore. Then they sat down and collected the good fish in baskets, but threw the bad away.”

Matthew 13:52 – He said to them, “Therefore every teacher of the law who has been instructed about the kingdom of heaven is like the owner of a house who brings out of his storeroom new treasures as well as old.”

Matthew 16:18-19 – “And I tell you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build my church, and the gates of Hades will not overcome it. I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven; whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven.”

Matthew 16:28 – “I tell you the truth, some who are standing here will not taste death before they see the Son of Man coming in his kingdom.”

Matthew 18:1-4 – At that time the disciples came to Jesus and asked, “Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?” He called a little child and had him stand among them. And he said: “I tell you the truth, unless you change and become like little children, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven. Therefore, whoever humbles himself like this child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.”

Matthew 18:23-27 – “Therefore, the kingdom of heaven is like a king who wanted to settle accounts with his servants....a man who owed him ten thousand talents was brought to him. Since he was not able to pay, the master ordered that he and his wife and his children and all that he had be sold to repay the debt. The servant fell on his knees before him. ‘Be patient with me,’ he begged, ‘and I will pay back everything.’ The servant’s master took pity on him, cancelled the debt and let him go.”

Matthew 18:28-31 – “But when that servant went out, he found one of his fellow servants who owed him a hundred denarii. He grabbed him and began to choke him. ‘Pay back what you owe me!’ he demanded. His fellow servant fell to his knees and begged him. ‘Be patient with me, and I will pay you back.’ But he refused. Instead, he went off and had the man thrown into prison until he could pay the debt. When the other servants saw what had happened, they were greatly distressed and went and told their master everything that had happened.”

Matthew 18:32-35 – “Then the master called the servant in. ‘You wicked servant,’ he said, ‘I cancelled all that debt of yours because you begged me to. Shouldn’t you have had mercy on your fellow servant just as I had on you?’ In anger his master turned him over to the jailers to be tortured, until he should pay back all he owed. This is how my heavenly Father will treat each of you unless you forgive your brother from your heart.”

Matthew 19:12 – “For some are eunuchs because they were born that way; others were made that way by men; and others have renounced marriage because of the kingdom of heaven. The one who can accept this should accept it.”

Matthew 19:23-26 – Then Jesus said to his disciples, “I tell you the truth, it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven. Again I tell you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God.” When the disciples heard this, they were greatly astonished and asked, “Who then can be saved?” Jesus looked at them and said, “With man this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.”

Article 42: The Kingdom of God: Jesus' Foundational Teaching, Reading 3

Matthew 20:1-7 – “For the kingdom of heaven is like a landowner who went out early in the morning to hire men to work in his vineyard. He agreed to pay them a denarius for the day and sent them into his vineyard. About the third hour he went out and saw others standing in the marketplace doing nothing. He told them, ‘You also go and work in my vineyard, and I will pay you whatever is right. So they went. He went out again about the sixth hour and the ninth hour and did the same thing. About the eleventh hour he went out and found still others standing around. He asked them, ‘Why have you been standing here all day long doing nothing?’ ‘Because no one has hired us,’ they answered. He said to them, ‘You also go and work in my vineyard.’”

Matthew 20:8-12 – “When evening came, the owner of the vineyard said to his foreman, ‘Call the workers and pay them their wages, beginning with the last ones hired and going on to the first.’ The workers who were hired about the eleventh hour came and each received a denarius. So when those came who were hired first, they expected to receive more. But each one of them also received a denarius. When they received it, they began to grumble against the landowner. ‘These men who were hired last worked only one hour,’ they said, ‘and you have made them equal to us who have borne the burden of the work and the heat of the day.’”

Matthew 20:13-16 – “But he answered one of them, ‘Friend, I am not being unfair to you. Didn’t you agree to work for a denarius? Take your pay and go. I want to give the man who was hired last the same as I gave you. Don’t I have the right to do what I want with my own money? Or are you envious because I am generous?’ So the last will be first, and the first will be last.”

Matthew 20:20-21 – Then the mother of Zebedee’s sons came to Jesus with her sons and, kneeling down, asked a favor of him.... “Grant that one of these two sons of mine may sit at your right and the other at your left in your kingdom.”

Matthew 20:25-28 – Jesus called them together and said, “You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their high officials exercise authority over them. Not so with you. Instead, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to be first must be your slave—just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many.”

Matthew 21:31-32 – ...Jesus said to them, “I tell you the truth, the tax collectors and the prostitutes are entering the kingdom of God ahead of you. For John came to you to show you the way of righteousness, and you did not believe him, but the tax collectors and the prostitutes did. And even after you saw this, you did not repent and believe. ”

Matthew 22:1-7 – Jesus spoke to them again in parables, saying: “The kingdom of heaven is like a king who prepared a wedding banquet for his son. He sent his servants to those who had been invited to the banquet to tell them to come, but they refused to come. Then he sent some more servants and said, ‘Tell those who have been invited that I have prepared my dinner: My oxen and fattened cattle have been butchered, and everything is ready. Come to the wedding banquet.’ But they paid no attention and went off—one to his field, another to his business. The rest seized his servants, mistreated them and killed them. The king was enraged. He sent his army and destroyed those murderers and burned their city.”

Matthew 22:8-10 – “Then he said to his servants, ‘The wedding banquet is ready, but those I invited did not deserve to come. Go to the street corners and invite to the banquet anyone you find.’ So the servants went out into the streets and gathered all the people they could find, both good and bad, and the wedding hall was filled with guests.”

Matthew 22:11-14 – “But when the king came in to see the guests, he noticed a man there who was not wearing wedding clothes. ‘Friend,’ he asked, ‘how did you get in here without wedding clothes?’ The man was speechless. Then the king told the attendants, ‘Tie him hand and foot, and throw him outside, into the darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.’ For many are invited, but few are chosen.”

Matthew 23:13 – “Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You shut the kingdom of heaven in men’s faces. You yourselves do not enter, nor will you let those enter who are trying to.”

Matthew 24:14 – “And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come.”

Matthew 25:1-5 – “At that time the kingdom of heaven will be like ten virgins who took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. Five of them were foolish and five were wise. The foolish ones took their lamps but did not take any oil with them. The wise, however, took oil in jars along with their lamps. The bridegroom was a long time in coming, and they all became drowsy and fell asleep.”

Matthew 25:6-9 – “At midnight the cry rang out: ‘Here’s the bridegroom! Come out to meet him!’ Then all the virgins woke up and trimmed their lamps. The foolish ones said to the wise, ‘Give us some of your oil; our lamps are going out.’ ‘No,’ they replied, ‘there may not be enough for both us and you. Instead, go to those who sell oil and buy some for yourselves.’”

Matthew 25:10-13 – “But while they were on their way to buy the oil, the bridegroom arrived. The virgins who were ready went in with him to the wedding banquet. And the door was shut. Later the others also came. ‘Sir! Sir!’ they said. ‘Open the door for us!’ But he replied, ‘I tell you the truth, I don’t know you.’ Therefore keep watch, because you do not know the day or the hour.”

Article 43: The Kingdom of God: Jesus' Foundational Teaching, Reading 4

Matthew 25:14-18 – “Again, [the kingdom of heaven] will be like a man going on a journey, who called his servants and entrusted his property to them. To the one he gave five talents of money, to another two talents, and to another one talent, each according to his ability. Then he went on his journey. The man who had received the five talents went at once and put his money to work and gained five more. So also, the one with the two talents gained two more. But the man who had received the one talent went off, dug a hole in the ground and hid his master’s money.”

Matthew 25:19-21 – “After a long time the master of those servants returned and settled accounts with them. The man who had received the five talents brought the other five. ‘Master,’ he said, ‘you entrusted me with five talents. See, I have gained five more.’ His master replied, ‘Well done, good and faithful servant! You have been faithful with a few things; I will put you in charge of many things. Come and share your master’s happiness!’”

Matthew 25:22-23 – “The man with the two talents also came. ‘Master,’ he said, ‘you entrusted me with two talents; see, I have gained two more.’ His master replied, ‘Well done, good and faithful servant! You have been faithful with a few things; I will put you in charge of many things. Come and share your master’s happiness!’”

Matthew 25:24-27 – “Then the man who had received the one talent came. ‘Master,’ he said, ‘I knew that you are a hard man, harvesting where you have not sown and gathering where you have not scattered seed. So I was afraid and went out and hid your talent in the ground. See, here is what belongs to you.’ His master replied, ‘You wicked, lazy servant! So you knew that I harvest where I have not sown and gather where I have not scattered seed? Well then, you should have put my money on deposit with the bankers, so that when I returned I would have received it back with interest.’”

Matthew 25:28-30 – “Take the talent from him and give it to the one who has the ten talents. For everyone who has will be given more, and he will have an abundance. Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken from him. And throw that worthless servant outside, into the darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.”

Matthew 25:31-33 – “When the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the angels with him, he will sit on his throne in heavenly glory. All the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate the people one from another as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. He will put the sheep on his right hand and the goats on his left.

Matthew 25:34-36 – “Then the King will say to those on his right, ‘Come, you who are blessed by my Father; take your inheritance, the kingdom prepared for you since the creation of the world. For I was hungry and you gave me something to eat, I was thirsty and you gave me something to drink, I was a stranger and you invited me in, I needed clothes and you clothed me, I was sick and you looked after me, I was in prison and you came to visit me.’”

Matthew 25:37-40 – “Then the righteous will answer him, ‘Lord, when did we see you hungry and feed you, or thirsty and give you something to drink? When did we see you a stranger and invite you in, or needing clothes and clothe you? When did we see you sick or in prison and go to visit you?’ The King will reply, ‘I tell you the truth, whatever you did for one of the least of these brothers of mine, you did for me.’”

Matthew 25:41-43 – “Then he will say to those on his left, ‘Depart from me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels. For I was hungry and you gave me nothing to eat, I was thirsty and you gave me nothing to drink, I was a stranger and you did not invite me in, I needed clothes and you did not clothe me, I was sick and in prison and you did not look after me.’”

Matthew 25:44-46 – “They also will answer, ‘Lord, when did we see you hungry or thirsty or a stranger or needing clothes or sick or in prison, and did not help you?’ He will reply, ‘I tell you the truth, whatever you did not do for one of the least of these, you did not do for me.’ Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life.”

Mark 4:26-29 – He also said, “This is what the kingdom of God is like. A man scatters seed on the ground. Night and day, whether he sleeps or gets up, the seed sprouts and grows, though he does not know how. All by itself the soil produces grain—first the stalk, then the head, then the full kernel in the head. As soon as the grain is ripe, he puts the sickle to it, because the harvest has come.”

Mark 9:47 – “And if your eye causes you to sin, pluck it out. It is better for you to enter the kingdom of God with one eye than to have two eyes and be thrown into hell...”

Mark 11:9-10 – Those who went ahead and those who followed shouted, “Hosanna!” “Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord!” “Blessed is the coming kingdom of our father David!” “Hosanna in the highest!”

Mark 12:34 – When Jesus saw that he had answered wisely, he said to him, “You are not far from the kingdom of God.”....

Luke 1:30-33 – But the angel said to her, “Do not be afraid, Mary, you have found favor with God. You will be with child and give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus. He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David, and he will reign over the house of Jacob forever; his kingdom will never end.”

Luke 4:42-43 – At daybreak Jesus went out to a solitary place. The people were looking for him and when they came to where he was, they tried to keep him from leaving them. But he said, “I must preach the good news of the kingdom of God to the other towns also, because that is why I was sent.”

Luke 6:20 – Looking at his disciples, he said: “Blessed are you who are poor, for yours is the kingdom of God.”

Article 44: The Kingdom of God: Jesus' Foundational Teaching, Reading 5

Luke 9:10-11 – When the apostles returned, they reported to Jesus what they had done. Then he took them with him and they withdrew by themselves to a town called Bethsaida, but the crowds learned about it and followed him. He welcomed them and spoke to them about the kingdom of God, and healed those who needed healing.

Luke 9:60-62 – Jesus said to him, “Let the dead bury their own dead, but you go and proclaim the kingdom of God.” Still another said, “I will follow you, Lord; but first let me go back and say good-bye to my family.” Jesus replied, “No one who puts his hand to the plow and looks back is fit for service in the kingdom of God.”

Luke 10:8-11 – “When you enter a town and are welcomed, eat what is set before you. Heal the sick who are there and tell them, ‘The kingdom of God is near you’. But when you enter a town and are not welcomed, go into its streets and say, ‘Even the dust of your town that sticks to our feet we wipe off against you. Yet be sure of this: The kingdom of God is near.’”

Luke 13:28-29 – “There will be weeping there, and gnashing of teeth, when you see Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, but you yourselves thrown out. People will come from east and west and north and south, and will take their places at the feast in the kingdom of God.”

Luke 16:16 – “The Law and the Prophets were proclaimed until John. Since that time, the good news of the kingdom of God is being preached, and everyone is forcing his way into it.”

Luke 17:20-21 – Once, having been asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God would come, Jesus replied, “The kingdom of God does not come with your careful observation, nor will people say, ‘Here it is,’ or ‘There it is,’ because the kingdom of God is within you.”

Luke 18:28-30 – Peter said to him, “We have left all we had to follow you!” “I tell you the truth,” Jesus said to them, “no one who has left home or wife or brothers or parents or children for the sake of the kingdom of God will fail to receive many times as much in this age and, in the age to come, eternal life.

Luke 19:11 – While they were listening to this, he went on to tell them a parable, because he was near Jerusalem and the people thought that the kingdom of God was going to appear at once.

Luke 21:29-31 – ... “Look at the fig tree and all the trees. When they sprout leaves, you can see for yourselves and know that summer is near. Even so, when you see these things happening, you know that the kingdom of God is near.

Luke 22:15-18 – And he said to them, “I have eagerly desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer. For I tell you, I will not eat it again until it finds fulfillment in the kingdom of God. After taking the cup, he gave thanks and said, “Take this and divide it among you. For I tell you, I will not drink again of the fruit of the vine until the kingdom of God comes.”

Luke 22:24-30 – Also a dispute arose among them as to which of them was considered to be greatest. Jesus said to them, “The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them; and those who exercise authority over them call themselves Benefactors. But you are not to be like that. Instead, the greatest among you should be like the youngest, and the one who rules like the one

who serves. For who is greater, the one who is at the table or the one who serves? Is it not the one who is at the table? But I am among you as one who serves. You are those who have stood by me in my trials. And I confer on you a kingdom, just as my Father conferred one on me, so that you may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

Luke 23:39-43 – One of the criminals who hung there hurled insults at him: "Aren't you the Christ? Save yourself and us!" But the other criminal rebuked him. "Don't you fear God," he said, "since you are under the same sentence? We are punished justly, for we are getting what our deeds deserve. But this man has done nothing wrong." Then he said, "Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom." Jesus answered him, "I tell you the truth, today you will be with me in paradise."

Luke 23:50-53 – Now there was a man named Joseph, a member of the Council, a good and upright man, who had not consented to their decision and action. He came from the Judean town of Arimathea and he was waiting for the kingdom of God. Going to Pilate, he asked for Jesus' body. Then he took it down, wrapped it in linen cloth and placed it in a tomb cut in the rock, one in which no one had yet been laid.

John 3:3-6 – In reply Jesus declared, "I tell you the truth, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again...no one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born of water and the Spirit. Flesh gives birth to flesh, but the Spirit gives birth to spirit."

John 18:33-35 – Pilate then went back inside the palace, summoned Jesus and asked him, "Are you the king of the Jews?" "Is that your own idea," Jesus asked, "or did others talk to you about me?" "Am I a Jew?" Pilate replied. "It was your own people and your chief priests who handed you over to me. What is it you have done?"

John 18:36-37 – Jesus said, "My kingdom is not of this world. If it were, my servants would fight to prevent my arrest by the Jews. But now my kingdom is from another place." "You are a king, then!" said Pilate. Jesus answered, "You are right in saying I am a king. In fact, for this reason I was born, and for this I came into the world, to testify to the truth. Everyone on the side of truth listens to me."

Acts 1:3 – After his suffering, he showed himself to these men and gave many convincing proofs that he was alive. He appeared to them over a period of forty days and spoke about the kingdom of God.

Acts 1:6-8 – So when they met together, they asked him, "Lord, are you at this time going to restore the kingdom to Israel?" He said to them: "It is not for you to know the times or dates the Father has set by his own authority. But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you, and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."

Article 45: The Teaching Commands of Jesus, Reading 1

Matthew 4:17 – ... “Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near.”

Matthew 4:19 – “Come, follow me...and I will make you fishers of men.”

Matthew 5:16 – “...let your light shine before men, that they may see your good deeds and praise your Father in heaven.”

Matthew 5:17 – “Do not think I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them.”

Matthew 5:21-22 – “You have heard that it was said to the people long ago, ‘Do not murder... But I tell you, anyone who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment... anyone who says to his brother, ‘Raca,’ is answerable to the Sanhedrin...anyone who says, ‘You fool!’ will be in danger of the fire of hell.”

Matthew 5:23-24 – “Therefore, if you are offering your gift at the altar and there remember that your brother has something against you, leave your gift there in front of the altar...go and be reconciled to your brother; then come and offer your gift.”

Matthew 5:25 – “Settle matters quickly with your adversary who is taking you to court. Do it while you are still with him on the way, or he may hand you over to the judge, and the judge may hand you over to the officer, and you may be thrown into prison.”

Matthew 5:27-28 – “You have heard that it was said, ‘Do not commit adultery.’ But I tell you that anyone who looks at a woman lustfully has already committed adultery with her in his heart.”

Matthew 5:29 – “If your right eye causes you to sin, gouge it out and throw it away. It is better for you to lose one part of your body than for your whole body to be thrown into hell.”

Matthew 5:30 – “And if your right hand causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away. It is better for you to lose one part of your body than for your whole body to go into hell.”

Matthew 5:31-32 – “It has been said, ‘Anyone who divorces his wife must give her a certificate of divorce.’ But I tell you that anyone who divorces his wife, except for marital unfaithfulness, causes her to become an adulteress, and anyone who marries the divorced woman commits adultery.”

Matthew 5:33-37 – “... you heard that it was said to the people long ago, ‘Do not break your oath, but keep the oaths you have made to the Lord.’ But I tell you, Do not swear at all...Simply let your ‘Yes’ be ‘Yes,’ and your ‘No,’ ‘No’...”

Matthew 5:38-42 – “You have heard that it was said, ‘Eye for eye, and tooth for tooth.’ But I tell you, Do not resist an evil person. If someone strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also...if someone wants to sue you and take your tunic, let him have your cloak as well. If someone forces you to go one mile, go with him two miles. Give to the one who asks you, and do not turn away from the one who wants to borrow from you.”

Matthew 5:43-45 – “You have heard that it was said, ‘Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’ But I tell you: Love your enemies [bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you]⁴⁴ and pray for those who persecute you....”

Matthew 5:48 – “Be perfect, therefore, as your heavenly Father is perfect.”

Matthew 6:1 – “Be careful not to do your ‘acts of righteousness’ before men, to be seen by them....”

Matthew 6:2-4 – “So when you give to the needy, do not announce it with trumpets, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and on the streets, to be honored by men...when you give to the needy, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing....”

Matthew 6:5 – “And when you pray, do not be like the hypocrites, for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the street corners to be seen by men....”

Matthew 6:6 – “But when you pray, go into your room, close the door and pray to your Father, who is unseen....”

Matthew 6:7-8 – “And when you pray, do not keep babbling like pagans, for they think they will be heard because of their many words. Do not be like them, for your Father knows what you need before you ask him.”

Matthew 6:9-13 – “This, then, is how you should pray: ‘Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name, your kingdom come, your will be done on earth as it is in heaven. Give us today our daily bread. Forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one.’”

Matthew 6:16-18 – “When you fast, do not look somber as the hypocrites do...But...put oil on your head and wash your face, so that it will not be obvious to men that you are fasting, but only to your Father, who is unseen....”

Matthew 6:19-20 – “Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth...store up for yourselves treasures in heaven....”

Matthew 6:25 – “... do not worry about your life, what you will eat or drink; or about your body, what you will wear....”

Matthew 6:26 – “Look at the birds of the air...your heavenly Father feeds them....”

Matthew 6:28-29 – “And why do you worry about clothes? See how the lilies of the field grow...not even Solomon in all his splendor was dressed like one of these.”

Matthew 6:31-32 – “So do not worry, saying, ‘What shall we eat?’ or ‘What shall we drink?’ or ‘What shall we wear?’ For the pagans run after all these things, and your heavenly Father knows you need them.”

⁴⁴ The bracketed text appears in some late manuscripts.

Article 46: The Teaching Commands of Jesus, Reading 2

Matthew 6:33 – “But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well.”

Matthew 7:1 – “Do not judge, or you too will be judged.”

Matthew 7:4-5 – “... first take the plank out of your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck of dust from your brother’s eye.”

Matthew 7:6 – “Do not give dogs what is sacred; do not throw your pearls to pigs...”

Matthew 7:7 – “Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you.”

Matthew 7:12 – “... in everything, do to others what you would have them do to you...”

Matthew 7:13 – “Enter through the narrow gate...”

Matthew 7:15 – “Watch out for false prophets...”

Matthew 8:22 – ... “Follow me, and let the dead bury their own dead.”

Matthew 9:13 – “... learn what this means: ‘I desire mercy, and not sacrifice.’”...

Matthew 9:38 – “Ask the Lord of the harvest, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field.”

Matthew 10:5-6 – These twelve Jesus sent out with the following instructions: “Do not go among the Gentiles or enter any town of the Samaritans. Go rather to the lost sheep of Israel.”

Matthew 10:7 – “As you go, preach this message: ‘The kingdom of heaven is near.’”

Matthew 10:8 – “Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received, freely give.”

Matthew 10:9-10 – “Do not take along any gold or silver or copper in your belts; take no bag for the journey, or extra tunic, or sandals or a staff...the worker is worth his keep.”

Matthew 10:11-14 – “Whatever town or village you enter, search for some worthy person there and stay at his house until you leave. As you enter the home, give it your greeting. If the home is deserving, let your peace rest on it; if it is not, let your peace return to you. If anyone will not welcome you or listen to your words, shake the dust off your feet when you leave that home or town.”

Matthew 10:16 – “I am sending you out like sheep among wolves...be as shrewd as snakes and as innocent as doves.”

Matthew 10:17 – “Be on your guard against men; they will hand you over to the local councils and flog you in their synagogues.”

Matthew 10:19 – “... when they arrest you, do not worry about what to say or how to say it...it will not be you speaking, but the Spirit of your Father speaking through you.”

Matthew 10:23 – “When you are persecuted in one place, flee to another...”

Matthew 10:25-26 – ... “If the head of the house has been called Beelzebub, how much more the members of his household!...do not be afraid of them...”

Matthew 10:27 – “What I tell you in the dark, speak in the daylight; what is whispered in your ear, proclaim from the roofs.”

Matthew 10:28 – “Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. Rather, be afraid of the One who can destroy both soul and body in hell.”

Matthew 10:34 – “Do not suppose I have come to bring peace to the earth. I did not come to bring peace, but a sword.”

Matthew 11:15 – “He who has ears, let him hear.”

Matthew 11:28-30 – “Come to me, all you who are weary and burdened, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and learn from me...”

Matthew 13:18 – “Listen then to what the parable of the sower means:...”

Matthew 14:27 – ...Jesus...said to them: “Take courage! It is I. Don’t be afraid.”

Matthew 14:28-29 – “Lord, if it’s you,” Peter replied, “tell me to come to you on the water.” “Come,” he said.

Matthew 15:10-11 – ... “Listen and understand. What goes into a man’s mouth does not make him ‘unclean’...what comes out of his mouth...is what makes him ‘unclean.’”

Matthew 15:12-14 – His disciples...asked, “Do you know that the Pharisees were offended when they heard this?” He replied.... “Leave them; they are blind guides....”

Matthew 16:24-25 – ... “If anyone would come after me, he must deny himself and take up his cross and follow me. For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for my sake will find it.”

Matthew 18:15-17 – “If your brother sins against you, go and show him his fault, just between the two of you.... But if he will not listen, take one or two others along.... If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the church...if he refuses to listen even to the church, treat him as you would a pagan or a tax collector.”

Matthew 19:12 – “...others have renounced marriage because of the kingdom of heaven. The one who can accept this should accept it.”

Article 47: The Teaching Commands of Jesus, Reading 3

Matthew 19:14 – ... “Let the little children come to me, and do not hinder them, for the kingdom of heaven belongs to such as these.”

Matthew 19:21 – ... “go, sell your possessions and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me.”

Matthew 22:19, 21 – “Show me the coin used for paying the tax.... Give to Caesar what is Caesar’s, and to God what is God’s.”

Matthew 23:2-4 – “The teachers of the law and the Pharisees sit in Moses’ seat. So you must obey them and do everything they tell you. But do not do what they do, for they do not practice what they preach.”

Matthew 23:8-10 – “...you are not to be called ‘Rabbi,’ for you have only one Master and you are all brothers. And do not call anyone on earth ‘father,’ for you have one Father, and he is in heaven. Nor are you to be called ‘teacher,’ for you have one Teacher, the Christ.”

Matthew 24:15-26 – “... when you see standing in the holy place ‘the abomination that causes desolation,’ spoken through the prophet Daniel—let the reader understand—...let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. Let no one on the roof of his house go down to take anything out of the house. Let no one in the field go back to get his cloak. Pray that your flight will not take place in winter or on the Sabbath...if anyone says to you, ‘Look, here is the Christ!’ or, ‘There he is!’ do not believe it...if anyone tells you, ‘There he is, out in the desert,’ do not go out; or, ‘Here he is, in the inner rooms,’ do not believe it.”

Matthew 24:32-33 – “... learn this lesson from the fig tree: As soon as its twigs get tender and its leaves come out, you know that summer is near...when you see all these things, you know that [the coming of the Son or Man] is near, right at the door.”

Matthew 24:42-44 – “Therefore keep watch, because you do not on what day your Lord will come. But understand this: If the owner of the house had known at what time of night the thief was coming, he would have kept watch and would not have let his house be broken into. So you also must be ready, because the Son of Man will come at an hour when you do not expect him.”

Matthew 26:36 – Then Jesus went with his disciples to a place called Gethsemane, and he said to them, “Sit here while I go over there and pray.”

Matthew 26:38 – Then he said to them, “My soul is overwhelmed with sorrow to the point of death. Stay here and keep watch with me.”

Matthew 26:41 – “Watch and pray so that you will not fall into temptation....”

Matthew 28:10 – ... “Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee....”

Matthew 28:19-20 – “... go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you....”

Mark 5:36 – ...Jesus told the synagogue ruler, “Don’t be afraid; just believe.”

Mark 6:31 – ... “Come with me by yourselves to a quiet place and get some rest.”

Mark 8:30 – Jesus warned them not to tell anyone about him.

Mark 9:9 – As they were coming down the mountain, Jesus gave them orders not to tell anyone what they had seen until the Son of Man had risen from the dead.

Mark 9:38-39 – “Teacher,” said John, “we saw a man driving out demons in your name and we told him to stop, because he was not one of us.” “Do not stop him,” Jesus said....

Mark 9:50 – “Salt is good, but if it loses its saltiness, how can you make it salty again? Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace with each other.”

Mark 10:9 – “... what God has joined together, let man not separate.”

Mark 10:48-49 – Many rebuked him and told him to be quiet, but he shouted all the more, “Son of David, have mercy on me!” Jesus stopped and said, “Call him.”....

Mark 11:22-23 – “Have faith in God...if anyone says to this mountain, ‘Go, throw yourself into the sea,’ and does not doubt in his heart but believes that what he said will happen, it will be done for him.”

Mark 11:24-25 – “... whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours...if you hold anything against anyone, forgive him...”

Mark 12:30-31 – “Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength.’ ...‘Love you neighbor as yourself..”

Mark 13:11 – “Whenever you are arrested and brought to trial, do not worry beforehand about what to say. Just say whatever is given you at the time, for it is not you speaking, but the Holy Spirit.”

Luke 5:4 – ...he said to Simon, “Put out into deep water, and let down the nets for a catch.”

Luke 5:10 – ...Jesus said to Simon, “Don’t be afraid; from now on you will catch men.”

Luke 5:27-28 – ...Jesus...saw a tax collector by the name of Levi sitting at this tax booth. “Follow me,” Jesus said to him, and Levi got up, left everything and followed him.

Luke 6:22-23 – “Blessed are you when men hate you...exclude you...insult you and reject your name...because of the Son of Man. Rejoice in that day and leap for joy...”

Luke 6:35 – “But love your enemies, do good to them, and lend to them without expecting to get anything back...”

Article 48: The Teaching Commands of Jesus, Reading 4

Luke 6:36 – “Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful.”

Luke 6:37 – “Do not judge, and you will not be judged. Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned. Forgive, and you will be forgiven. Give, and it will be given to you....”

Luke 10:3-4 – “Go! I am sending you out like lambs among wolves. Do not take a purse or bag or sandals; and do not greet anyone on the road.”

Luke 10:5-7 – When you enter a house, first say, ‘Peace to this house.’ If a man of peace is there, your peace will rest on him; if not, it will return to you. Stay in that house, eating and drinking whatever they give you, for the worker deserves his wages. Do not move around from house to house.

Luke 10:8-11 – When you enter a town and are welcomed, eat what is set before you. Heal the sick who are there and tell them, ‘The kingdom of God is near you.’ But when you enter a town and are not welcomed, go into its streets and say, ‘Even the dust of your town that sticks to our feet we wipe off against you. Yet be sure of this: The kingdom of God is near.’”

Luke 10:20 – “... do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you...rejoice that your names are written in heaven.”

Luke 10:36-37 – “Which of these three do you think was a neighbor to the man who fell into the hands of robbers?” The expert in the law replied, “The one who had mercy on him.” Jesus told him, “Go and do likewise.”

Luke 11:35 – “See to it, then, that the light within you is not darkness.”

Luke 12:1 – ... “Be on your guard against the yeast of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.”

Luke 12:15 – ... “Watch out! Be on your guard against all kinds of greed; a man’s life does not consist in the abundance of his possessions.”

Luke 12:29 – “And do not set your heart on what you will eat or drink; do not worry about it.”

Luke 12:32 – “Do not be afraid, little flock, for your Father has been pleased to give you the kingdom.”

Luke 12:33 – “Sell your possessions and give to the poor. Provide purses for yourselves that will not wear out, a treasure in heaven that will not be exhausted....”

Luke 12:35-36 – “Be dressed ready for service and keep your lamps burning, like men waiting for their master to return from a wedding banquet, so that when he comes and knocks they can immediately open the door for him.”

Luke 13:24 – “Make every effort to enter through the narrow door...many, I tell you, will try to enter and will not be able to.”

Luke 14:8, 10 – “When someone invites you to a wedding feast, do not take the place of honor, for a person more distinguished than you may have been invited.... But...take the lowest place, so that when your host comes, he will say to you, ‘Friend, move up to a better place.’”

Luke 14:12-13 – ... “When you give a luncheon or dinner, do not invite your friends, your brothers or relatives, or your rich neighbors; if you do, they may invite you back and so you will be repaid. But when you give a banquet, invite the poor, the crippled, the lame, the blind...”

Luke 14:26-27 – “If anyone comes to me and does not hate his father and mother, his wife and children, his brothers and sisters—yes, even his own life—he cannot be my disciple. And anyone who does not carry his cross and follow me cannot be my disciple.”

Luke 14:33 – “... any of you who does not give up everything he has cannot be my disciple.”

Luke 17:3-4 – “.... If your brother sins, rebuke him, and if he repents, forgive him. If he sins against you seven times in a day, and seven times comes back to you and says, ‘I repent,’ forgive him.”

Luke 18:6-7 – ... “Listen to what the unjust judge says. And will not God bring about justice for his chosen ones, who cry out to him day and night?....”

Luke 21:8-9 – “Watch out that you are not deceived. For many will come in my name, claiming, ‘I am he,’ and, ‘The time is near.’ Do not follow them. When you hear of revolutions, do not be frightened...”

Luke 21:34-36 – “Be careful, or your hearts will be weighed down with dissipation, drunkenness and the anxieties of life.... Be always on the watch, and pray that you may be able to escape all that is about to happen....”

Luke 22:17-19 – After taking the cup, he gave thanks and said, “Take this and divide it among you.”.... And he took bread, gave thanks and broke it, and gave it to them, saying, “This is my body given for you; do this in remembrance of me.”

Luke 22:25-26 – ... “The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them.... But you are not to be like that....the greatest among you should be like the youngest, and the one who rules like the one who serves.”

Luke 22:50-51 – ... one of them struck the servant of the high priest, cutting off his right ear... Jesus answered, “No more of this!” ...he touched the man’s ear and healed him.

Luke 24:37-39 – They were startled and frightened, thinking they saw a ghost. He said to them, “Why are you troubled, and why do doubts arise in your minds? Look at my hands and my feet. It is I myself! Touch and see...”

Article 49: The Teaching Commands of Jesus, Reading 5

John 1:43 – ...Finding Philip, he said to him, “Follow me.”

John 2:15-16 – So he made a whip out of cords, and drove all from the temple area, both sheep and cattle; he scattered the coins of the money changers and overturned their tables. To those who sold doves he said, “Get these out of here! How dare you turn my Father’s house into a market!”

John 4:24 – “God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth.”

John 5:45 – “But do not think I will accuse you before the Father. Your accuser is Moses, on whom your hopes are set.”

John 6:12 – When they had all had enough to eat, he said to his disciples, “Gather the pieces that are left over. Let nothing be wasted.”

John 6:16-20 – ...his disciples went down to the lake.... A strong wind was blowing and the waters grew rough. When they had rowed three or three and a half miles, they saw Jesus approaching the boat, walking on the water; and they were terrified. But he said to them, “It is I; don’t be afraid.”

John 6:27 – “Do not work for food that spoils, but for food that endures to eternal life, which the Son of Man will give you....”

John 6:29 – ... “The work of God is this: to believe in the one he has sent.”

John 6:43 – “Stop grumbling among yourselves,”...

John 6:53-54 – ... “... unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink his blood, you have no life in you. Whoever eats my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day.”

John 7:24 – “Stop judging by mere appearances, and make a right judgment.”

John 7:37-38 – On the last and greatest day of the Feast, Jesus stood and said in a loud voice, “If anyone is thirsty, let him come to me and drink. Whoever believes in me, as the Scripture has said, streams of living water will flow from within him.”

John 8:10-11 – Jesus straightened up and asked her, “Woman, where are they? Has no one condemned you?” “No one, sir,” she said. “Then neither do I condemn you.... Go now, and leave your life of sin.”

John 8:24 – “...if you do not believe I am the one I claim to be, you will indeed die in your sins.”

John 8:31-32 – ...Jesus said, “If you hold to my teachings, you are really my disciples. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free.”

John 13:14-15 – “Now that I, your Lord and Teacher, have washed your feet, you also should wash one another’s feet. I have set you an example....”

John 13:34 – “A new command I give you: Love one another. As I have loved you, so you must love one another.”

John 14:1 – “Do not let your hearts be troubled. Trust in God; trust also in me.”

John 14:11 – “Believe me when I say that I am in the Father and the Father is in me; or at least believe on the evidence of the miracles themselves.”

John 14:15 – “If you love me, you will obey what I command.”

John 14:27 – “...Do not let your hearts be troubled and do not be afraid.”

John 15:4 – “Remain in me, and I will remain in you....”

John 15:9 – “As the Father has loved me, so have I loved you.... remain in my love.”

John 15:12 – “My command is this: Love one another as I have loved you.”

John 15:18 – “If the world hates you, keep in mind that it hated me first.”

John 18:11 – Jesus commanded Peter, “Put your sword away! Shall I not drink the cup the Father has given me?”

John 20:21-22 – Again Jesus said, “Peace be with you! As the Father has sent me, so I am sending you.” ...he breathed on them and said, “Receive the Holy Spirit.”

John 20:27-29 – Then he [Jesus] said to Thomas, “Put your finger here; see my hands. Reach out your hand and put it into my side. Stop doubting and believe.” Thomas said to him, “My Lord and my God!” Then Jesus said to him, “Because you have seen me, you have believed; blessed are those who have not seen and yet have believed.”

John 21:12 – Jesus said to them, “Come and have breakfast.”

John 21:15 – Jesus said to Simon Peter... “Feed my lambs.”

John 21:16 – Again Jesus said, “Simon son of John.... Take care of my sheep.”

John 21:17 – The third time he said to him, “Simon son of John, do you love me?” Peter was hurt because Jesus asked him the third time, “Do you love me?” He said, “Lord, you know all things; you know that I love you.” Jesus said, “Feed my sheep.”

John 21:19 – ...Then [Jesus] said to [Peter], “Follow me!”

John 21:22 – Jesus [spoke to Peter], “If I want [John] to remain alive until I return, what is that to you? You must follow me.”

Article 50: The Healing Commands of Jesus

Matthew 8:2-3 – A man with leprosy came and knelt before him and said, “Lord, if you are willing, you can make me clean.” Jesus reached out his hand and touched the man. “I am willing,” he said. “Be clean!” Immediately he was cured of his leprosy.

Matthew 8:13 – Then Jesus said to the centurion, “Go! It will be done just as you believed it would.” And his servant was healed at that very hour.

Matthew 9:4-7 – Jesus said... “Which is easier: to say, ‘Your sins are forgiven,’ or to say, ‘Get up and walk’? But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins...” Then he said to the paralytic, “Get up, take your mat and go home.” And the man got up and went home.

Matthew 9:20, 22 – Just then a woman who had been subject to bleeding for twelve years came up behind him and touched the edge of his cloak. Jesus turned and saw her... “Take heart, daughter,” he said, “your faith has healed you.” And the woman was healed from that moment.

Mark 5:41-42 – He took her by the hand and said to her, “*Talitha koum!*” (which means, “Little girl, I say to you, get up!”). Immediately the girl stood up and walked around (she was twelve years old)....

Mark 7:33-35 – After he took him aside, away from the crowd, Jesus put his fingers into the man’s ears. Then he spit and touched the man’s tongue. He looked up to heaven and with a deep sigh said to him, “*Ephphatha!*” (which means, “Be opened!”). At this, the man’s ears were opened, his tongue was loosened and he began to speak plainly.

Luke 6:8-10 – But Jesus knew what they were thinking and said to the man with the shriveled hand, “Get up and stand in front of everyone.” So he got up and stood there. Then Jesus said to them, “I ask you, which is lawful on the Sabbath: to do good or to do evil, to save life or to destroy it?” He looked around at them all, and then said to the man, “Stretch out your hand.” He did so, and his hand was completely restored.

Luke 17:12-14 – As he was going into a village, ten men who had leprosy met him. They stood at a distance and called out in a loud voice, “Jesus, Master, have pity on us.” When he saw them, he said, “Go, show yourselves to the priests.” And as they went, they were cleansed.

Luke 18:40-43 – Jesus stopped and ordered the man be brought to him. When he came near, Jesus asked him, “What do you want me to do for you?” “Lord, I want to see,” said the man. Jesus said to him, “Receive your sight; your faith has healed you.” Immediately he received his sight and followed Jesus, praising God....

John 5:6-9 – When Jesus saw him lying there and learned that he had been in this condition for a long time, he asked him, “Do you want to get well?” “Sir,” the invalid replied, “I have no one to help me into the pool when the water is stirred. While I am trying to get in, someone else goes down ahead of me.” Then Jesus said to him, “Get up! Pick up your mat, and walk.” At once the man was cured; he picked up his mat and walked.

John 9:1-3 – As he went along, he saw a man blind from birth. His disciples asked him, “Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind.” “Neither this man nor his parents sinned,” said Jesus, “but this happened so that the work of God might be displayed in his life.”

John 9:6-7 – ...he spit on the ground, made some mud with the saliva, and put it on the man's eyes. "Go," he told him, "wash in the Pool of Siloam" (this word means Sent). So the man went and washed, and came home seeing.

John 11:43-44 – When he had said this, Jesus called in a loud voice, "Lazarus, come out!" The dead man came out, his hands and feet wrapped with strips of linen. Jesus said to them, "Take off the grave clothes and let him go."

Article 51: The Greatest Commandment: Love – Reading 1

Matthew 10:37-38 – “Anyone who loves his father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; anyone who loves his son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me; and anyone who does not take his cross and follow me is not worthy of me.”

Mark 10:17-21 – As Jesus started on his way, a man ran up to him and fell on his knees before him. “Good teacher,” he asked, “what must I do to inherit eternal life?” “Why do you call me good?” Jesus answered. “No one is good – except God alone. You know the commandments: ‘Do not murder, do not commit adultery, do not steal, do not give false testimony, do not defraud, honor your father and mother.’” “Teacher,” he declared, “all these I have kept since I was a boy.” Jesus looked at him and loved him. “One thing you lack,” he said. “Go, sell everything you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven. Then come, follow me.”

Mark 12:28-31 – One of the teachers of the law came and heard them debating. Noticing that Jesus had given them a good answer, he asked him, “Of all the commandments, which is the most important?” “The most important one,” answered Jesus, “is this: ‘Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God, the Lord is one. Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength.’ The second is this: ‘Love your neighbor as yourself.’ There is no commandment greater than these.”

Mark 12:32-34 – “Well said, teacher,” the man replied. You are right in saying that God is one and there is no other but him. To love him with all your heart, with all your understanding and with all your strength, and to love your neighbor as yourself is more important than all burnt offerings and sacrifices.” When Jesus saw that he had answered wisely, he said to him, “You are not far from the kingdom of God.” And from then on no one dared ask him any more questions.

Luke 6:27-31 – “But I tell you who hear me: Love your enemies, do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you. If someone strikes you on one cheek, turn to him the other also. If someone takes your cloak, do not stop him from taking your tunic. Give to everyone who asks you, and if anyone takes what belongs to you, do not demand it back. Do to others as you would have them do to you.”

Luke 6:32-34 – “If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you: Even ‘sinners’ love those who love them. And if you do good to those who are good to you, what credit is that to you? Even ‘sinners’ do that. And if you lend to those from whom you expect repayment, what credit is that to you? Even ‘sinners’ lend to ‘sinners,’ expecting to be repaid in full.”

Luke 6:35-36 – But love your enemies, do good to them, and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High, because he is kind to the ungrateful and wicked. Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful.

Luke 7:40-43 – Jesus answered him, “Simon, I have something to tell you.” Tell me, teacher,” he said. “Two men owed money to a certain moneylender. One owed him five hundred denarii, and the other fifty. Neither of them had the money to pay him back, so he canceled the debts of both. Now which of them will love him more?” Simon replied, “I suppose the one who had the bigger debt canceled.” “You have judged correctly,” Jesus said.

Luke 7:44-47 – Then he turned toward the woman and said to Simon, “Do you see this woman? I came into your house. You did not give me any water for my feet, but she weeted them with her hair. You did not give me a kiss, but this woman, from the time I entered, has not stopped kissing my feet. You did not put oil on my head, but she has poured perfume on my feet. Therefore, I tell you, her many sins have been forgiven – for she loved much. But he who has been forgiven little loves little.”

Luke 11:42 – “Woe to you Pharisees, because you give God a tenth of your mint, rue and all other kinds of garden herbs, but you neglect justice and the love of God. You should have practiced the latter without leaving the former undone.”

Luke 16:13-14 – “No servant can serve two masters. Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money.” The Pharisees, who loved money, heard all this and were sneering at Jesus.

John 3:16-17 – “For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life. For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save the world through him.”

John 3:19 – “This is the verdict: Light has come into the world, but men loved darkness instead of light because their deeds were evil.”

John 3:35-36 – The Father loves the Son and has placed everything in his hands. Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life, but whoever rejects the Son will not see life, for God’s wrath remains on him.

John 5:20 – “For the Father loves the Son and shows him all he does. Yes, to your amazement he will show him even greater things than these.”

John 5:41-42 – “I do not accept praise from men, but I know you. I know that you do not have the love of God in your hearts.”

John 8:42 – Jesus said to them, “If God were your Father, you would love me, for I came from God and now am here. I have not come on my own; but he sent me.”

John 10:17-18 – “The reason my Father loves me is that I lay down my life – only to take it up again. No one takes it from me, but I lay it down of my own accord. I have authority to lay it down and authority to take it up again. This command I received from my Father.”

John 11:3-6 – So the sisters sent word to Jesus, “Lord, the one you love is sick.” When he heard this, Jesus said, “This sickness will not end in death. No, it is for God’s glory so that God’s Son may be glorified through it.” Jesus loved Martha and her sister and Lazarus. Yet when he heard that Lazarus was sick, he stayed where he was two more days.

Article 52: The Greatest Commandment: Love – Reading 2

John 11:35-37 – Jesus wept. Then the Jews said, “See how he loved him!” But some of them said, “Could not he who opened the eyes of the blind man have kept this man from dying?”

John 12:25 – “The man who loves his life will lose it, while the man who hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life.”

John 12:42-43 – Yet at the same time many even among the leaders believed in him. But because of the Pharisees they would not confess their faith for fear they would be put out of the synagogue; for they loved praise from men more than praise from God.

John 13:1 – It was just before the Passover Feast. Jesus knew that the time had come for him to leave this world and go to the Father. Having loved his own who were in the world, he now showed them the full extent of his love.

John 13:23-25 – One of them, the disciple whom Jesus loved, was reclining next to him. Simon Peter motioned to this disciple and said, “Ask him which one he means.” Leaning back against Jesus, he asked him, “Lord, who is it?”

John 13:34-35 – “A new command I give you: Love one another. As I have loved you, so you must love one another. By this all men will know that you are my disciples, if you love one another.”

John 14:15 – “If you love me, you will obey what I command.”

John 14:21-22 – “Whoever has my commands and obeys them, he is the one who loves me. He who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I too will love him and show myself to him.” Then Judas (not Judas Iscariot) said, “But, Lord, why do you intend to show yourself to us and not to the world?”

John 14:23-24 – Jesus replied, “If anyone loves me, he will obey my teaching. My Father will love him, and we will come to him and make our home with him. He who does not love me will not obey my teaching. These words you hear are not my own; they belong to the Father who sent me.”

John 14:28 – “You heard me say, ‘I am going away and I am coming back to you.’ If you loved me, you would be glad that I am going to the Father, for the Father is greater than I.

John 14:30-31 – “I will not speak with you much longer, for the prince of this world is coming. He has no hold on me, but the world must learn that I love the Father and that I do exactly what my Father has commanded me. Come now, let us leave.”

John 15:9-10 – “As the Father has loved me, so have I loved you. Now remain in my love. If you obey my commands, you will remain in my love, just as I have obeyed my Father’s commands and remain in his love.”

John 15:12-14 – “My command is this: Love each other as I have loved you. Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends. You are my friends if you do what I command.”

John 15:17 – “This is my command: Love each other.”

John 15:19 – “If you belonged to the world, it would love you as its own. As it is, you do not belong to the world, but I have chosen you out of the world. That is why the world hates you.”

John 16:27 – “No, the Father himself loves you because you have loved me and have believed that I came from God.”

John 17:22-24 – “I have given them the glory that you gave me, that they may be one as we are one: I in them and you in me. May they be brought to complete unity to let the world know that you sent me and have loved them even as you have loved me. Father, I want those you have given me to be with me where I am, and to see my glory, the glory you have given me because you loved me before the creation of the world.

John 17:25-26 – Righteous Father, though the world does not know you, I know you, and they know that you have sent me. I have made you known to them, and will continue to make you known in order that the love you have for me may be in them and that I myself may be in them.”

John 19:26-27 – When Jesus saw his mother there, and the disciple whom he loved standing nearby, he said to his mother, “Dear woman, here is your son,” and to the disciple, “Here is your mother.” From that time on, this disciple took her into his home.

John 20:1-2 – Early on the first day of the week, while it was still dark, Mary Magdalene went to the tomb and saw that the stone had been removed from the entrance. So she came running to Simon Peter and the other disciple, the one Jesus loved, and said, “They have taken the Lord out of the tomb, and we don’t know where they have put him!”

John 21:7 – Then the disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter, “It is the Lord!” As soon as Simon Peter heard him say, “It is the Lord,” he wrapped his outer garment around him (for he had taken it off) and jumped into the water.

John 21:15 – When they had finished eating, Jesus said to Simon Peter, “Simon son of John, do you truly love me more than these?” “Yes, Lord,” he said, “you know that I love you.” Jesus said, “Feed my lambs.”

John 21:16 – Again Jesus said, “Simon son of John, do you truly love me?” He answered, “Yes, Lord, you know that I love you.” Jesus said, “Take care of my sheep.”

John 21:17, 19 – The third time he said to him, “Simon son of John, do you love me?” Peter was hurt because Jesus asked him the third time, “Do you love me?” He said, “Lord, you know all things; you know that I love you.” Jesus said, “Feed my sheep.... Then he said to him, “Follow me!”

John 21:20-21 – Peter turned and saw that the disciple whom Jesus loved was following them.... He asked, “Lord, what about him?” Jesus answered, “If I want him to remain alive until I return, what is that to you? You must follow me.”

PART VIII: GOD: WHO IS HE?

Article 53: God Is Creator

Genesis 1:1-2 – In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. Now the earth was formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters.

Genesis 1:26-27 – ...God said, "Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground." So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them.

Genesis 6:7-8 – So the LORD said, "I will wipe mankind, whom I have created, from the face of the earth—men and animals, and creatures that move along the ground, and birds of the air—for I am grieved that I have made them." But Noah found favor in the eyes of the LORD.

Genesis 14:18-19 – Then Melchizedek king of Salem brought out bread and wine. He was priest of God Most High, and he blessed Abram, saying, "Blessed be Abram by God Most High, Creator of heaven and earth."

Psalms 8:3-6 – When I consider your heavens, the work of your fingers, the moon and the stars, which you have set in place, what is man that you are mindful of him, the son of man that you care for him? You made him a little lower than the heavenly beings and crowned him with glory and honor. You made him ruler over the works of your hands; you put everything under his feet:

Psalms 90:2 – Before the mountains were born or you brought forth the earth and the world, from everlasting to everlasting you are God.

Psalms 95:6-7 – Come, let us bow down in worship, let us kneel before the LORD our Maker; for he is our God and we are the people of his pasture, the flock under his care.

Psalms 121:1-2 – I lift up my eyes to the hills—where does my help come from? My help comes from the LORD, the Maker of heaven and earth.

Psalms 146:5-6 – Blessed is he whose help is the God of Jacob, whose hope is in the LORD his God, the Maker of heaven and earth, the sea, and everything in them—the LORD, who remains faithful forever.

Psalms 148:1-6 – Praise the LORD. Praise the LORD from the heavens, praise him in the heights above. Praise him, all his angels, praise him, all his heavenly hosts. Praise him, sun and moon, praise him, all you shining stars. Praise him, you highest heavens and you waters above the skies. Let them praise the name of the LORD, for he commanded and they were created. He set them in place for ever and ever; he gave a decree that will never pass away.

Proverbs 22:2 – Rich and poor have this in common: the LORD is...Maker of them all.

Ecclesiastes 12:1 – Remember your Creator in the days of your youth, before the days of trouble come and the years approach when you will say, "I find no pleasure in them"—

Isaiah 40:26-28 – Lift your eyes and look to the heavens: Who created all these? He who brings out the starry host one by one, and calls them each by name. Because of his great power and mighty strength, not one of them is missing.... Do you not know? Have you not heard? The LORD is the everlasting God, the Creator of the ends of the earth....

Isaiah 45:18 – For this is what the LORD says—he who created the heavens, he is God; he who fashioned and made the earth, he founded it; he did not create it to be empty, but formed it to be inhabited—he says: “I am the LORD, and there is no other.

Jeremiah 1:4-5 – The word of the LORD came to me, saying, “Before I formed you in the womb I knew you, before you were born I set you apart; I appointed you as a prophet to the nations.”

Mark 13:18-19 – “Pray that this will not take place in winter, because those will be days of distress unequalled from the beginning, when God created the world, until now—and never to be equaled again.”

Luke 1:30-35 – But the angel said to her, “Do not be afraid, Mary, you have found favor with God. You will be with child and give birth to a son...” “How will this be,” Mary asked the angel, “since I am a virgin?” The angel answered, “The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. So the holy one to be born will be called the Son of God.”

John 1:1-3 – In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made.

Romans 1:20 – For since the creation of the world God’s invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature—have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse.

Ephesians 3:8-9 – Although I am less than the least of all God’s people, this grace was given me to preach to the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ, and to make plain to everyone the administration of this mystery, which for ages past was kept hidden in God, who created all things.

Colossians 1:16 – For by [the Son] all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things were created by him and for him.

Revelation 4:9-11 – Whenever the living creatures give glory, honor and thanks to him who sits on the throne and who lives for ever and ever, the twenty-four elders fall down before him who sits on the throne, and worship him who lives for ever and ever. They lay their crowns before the throne and say: “You are worthy, our Lord and God, to receive glory and honor and power, for you created all things, and by your will they were created and have their being.”

Revelation 21:5 – He who was seated on the throne said, “I am making everything new!”...

Article 54: God Is Holy

By revealing to us that God is holy, the Bible is telling us that he is separate. He is separate from his creation. All that exists is found in two foundational categories: God, then everything else.

This aspect of God's holiness is the basis for our worship. We approach the God who is other than we are in reverence and fear. We can never become holy in this sense.

God is also separate from sin. In this sense of God's holiness we are to become more and more like him. Jesus teaches us how through our apprenticeship with him.

Exodus 3:4-6 - ...God called to him from within the bush, "Moses! Moses!" And Moses said, "Here I am." "Do not come any closer," God said. "Take off your sandals, for the place where you are standing is holy ground." Then he said, "I am the God of your father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob." At this, Moses hid his face, because he was afraid to look at God.

Exodus 15:1, 11 - Then Moses and the Israelites sang this song to the LORD: "I will sing to the LORD, for he is highly exalted. The horse and its rider he has hurled into the sea... Who among the gods is like you, O LORD? Who is like you—majestic in holiness, awesome in glory, working wonders?"

Leviticus 19:1-2 - The LORD said to Moses, "Speak to the entire assembly of Israel and say to them: 'Be holy because I, the LORD your God, am holy.'"

1 Samuel 2:1-2 - Then Hannah prayed and said: "... There is no one holy like the LORD; there is no one besides you; there is no Rock like our God."

1 Chronicles 16:7-10 - That day David first committed to Asaph and his associates this psalm of thanks to the LORD: Give thanks to the LORD, call on his name; make known among the nations what he has done. Sing to him, sing praise to him; tell of all his wonderful acts. Glory in his holy name...

Psalms 22:3 - Yet you are enthroned as the Holy One; you are the praise of Israel.

Psalms 99:1-3 - The LORD reigns, let the nations tremble; he sits enthroned between the cherubim, let the earth shake. Great is the LORD in Zion; he is exalted over all the nations. Let them praise your great and awesome name—he is holy.

Psalms 99:5 - Exalt the LORD our God and worship at his footstool; he is holy.

Psalms 99:9 - Exalt the LORD our God and worship at his holy mountain, for the LORD our God is holy.

Psalms 103:1 - Praise the LORD, O my soul; all my inmost being, praise his holy name.

Psalms 145:21 - My mouth will speak in praise of the LORD. Let every creature praise his holy name for ever and ever.

Isaiah 6:1-3 - In the year that King Uzziah died, I saw the Lord seated on a throne, high and exalted, and the train of his robe filled the temple. Above him were seraphs, each with six wings: With two wings they covered their faces, with two they covered their feet, and with two they were flying. And they were calling to one another: "Holy, holy, holy is the LORD Almighty; the whole earth is full of his glory."

Isaiah 40:25 - "To whom will you compare me? ...who is my equal?" says the Holy One.

Ezekiel 36:22 – “Therefore say to the house of Israel, ‘This is what the Sovereign LORD says: It is not for your sake, O house of Israel, that I am going to do these things, but for the sake of my holy name, which you have profaned among the nations where you have gone.’”

Mark 1:23-24 – Just then a man in their synagogue who was possessed by an evil spirit cried out, “What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are—the Holy One of God!”

Luke 1:46-49 – And Mary said: “My soul glorifies the Lord and my spirit rejoices in God my Savior, for he has been mindful of the humble state of his servant. From now on all generations will call me blessed, for the Mighty One has done great things for me—holy is his name.”

John 17:11 – “I will remain in the world no longer, but they are still in the world, and I am coming to you. Holy Father, protect them by the power of your name—the name you gave me—so that they may be one as we are one.”

Acts 3:12-15 – When Peter saw this, he said to them: “Men of Israel, why does this surprise you? ... The God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, the God of our fathers, has glorified his servant Jesus. You handed him over to be killed, and you disowned him before Pilate, though he had decided to let him go. You disowned the Holy and Righteous One and asked that a murderer be released to you. You killed the author of life, but God raised him from the dead. We are witnesses of this.”

1 Peter 1:14-16 - As obedient children, do not conform to the evil desires you had when you lived in ignorance. But just as he who called you is holy, so be holy in all you do; for it is written: “Be holy, because I am holy.”

Revelation 3:7 – “To the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: ‘These are the words of him who is holy and true...’”

Revelation 4:8 – Each of the four living creatures had six wings and was covered with eyes all around, even under his wings. Day and night they never stop saying: “Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come.”

Revelation 15:2-4 - ...They held harps given them by God and sang the song of Moses the servant of God and the song of the Lamb: “Great and marvelous are your deeds, Lord God Almighty. Just and true are your ways, King of the ages. Who will not fear you, O Lord, and bring glory to your name? For you alone are holy....”

Article 55: God Is Love

Exodus 34:5-7 – Then the LORD came down in the cloud and stood there with him and proclaimed his name, the LORD. And he passed in front of Moses, proclaiming, “The LORD, the LORD, the compassionate and gracious God, slow to anger, abounding in love and faithfulness, maintaining love to thousands, and forgiving wickedness....”

Deuteronomy 7:9 – Know therefore that the LORD your God is God; he is the faithful God, keeping his covenant of love to a thousand generations of those who love him and keep his commands.

2 Chronicles 5:13 – The trumpeters and singers joined in unison, as with one voice, to give praise and thanks to the LORD. Accompanied by trumpets, cymbals and other instruments, they raised their voices in praise to the LORD and sang: “He is good; his love endures forever.”

Psalms 36:5-6 – Your love, O LORD, reaches to the heavens, your faithfulness to the skies. Your righteousness is like the mighty mountains, your justice like the great deep....

Psalms 51:1 – Have mercy on me, O God, according to your unfailing love; according to your great compassion blot out my transgressions.

Psalms 63:3-4 – Because your love is better than life, my lips will glorify you. I will praise you as long as I live, and in your name I will lift up my hands.

Psalms 86:15 – But you, O Lord, are a compassionate and gracious God, slow to anger, abounding in love and faithfulness.

Psalms 92:1-2 – It is good to praise the LORD and make music to your name, O Most High, to proclaim your love in the morning and your faithfulness at night.

Psalms 100:5 – For the LORD is good and his love endures forever; his faithfulness continues through all generations.

Psalms 107:43 – Whoever is wise, let him heed these things and consider the great love of the LORD.

Psalms 136:1 – Give thanks to the LORD, for he is good. His love endures forever.

Isaiah 54:10 – “Though the mountains be shaken and the hills be removed, yet my unfailing love for you will not be shaken nor my covenant of peace be removed,” says the LORD, who has compassion on you.

Jeremiah 31:3-4 – The LORD appeared to us in the past, saying: “I have loved you with an everlasting love; I have drawn you with loving-kindness. I will build you up again and you will be rebuilt, O Virgin Israel....”

Lamentations 3:22-23 – Because of the LORD’S great love we are not consumed, for his compassions never fail. They are new every morning; great is your faithfulness.

Joel 2:12-13 – “Even now,” declares the LORD, “return to me with all your heart, with fasting and weeping and mourning.” Rend your heart and not your garments. Return to the LORD your God, for he is gracious and compassionate, slow to anger and abounding in love....”

John 3:16 – For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.”

John 13:1 – It was just before the Passover Feast. Jesus knew that the time had come for him to leave this world and go to the Father. Having loved his own who were in the world, he now showed them the full extent of his love.

John 15:12-14 – “My command is this: Love each other as I have loved you. Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends. You are my friends if you do what I command.”

Romans 8:38-39 – For I am convinced that neither death nor life, neither angels nor demons, neither the present nor the future, nor any powers, neither height nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God that is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

2 Corinthians 13:14 – May the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all.

Ephesians 3:17-19 – ...And I pray that you, being rooted and established in love, may have power, together with all the saints, to grasp how wide and long and high and deep is the love of Christ, and to know this love that surpasses knowledge—that you may be filled to the measure of all the fullness of God.

Titus 3:4-5 – But when the kindness and love of God our Savior appeared, he saved us, not because of righteous things we had done, but because of his mercy...

1 John 3:1 – How great is the love the Father has lavished on us, that we should be called children of God! And that is what we are! The reason the world does not know us is that it did not know him.

1 John 4:7-9 – Dear friends, let us love one another, for love comes from God. Everyone who loves has been born of God and knows God. Whoever does not love does not know God, because God is love. This is how God showed his love among us: He sent his one and only Son into the world that we might live through him.

1 John 4:10-12 – This is love: not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son as an atoning sacrifice for our sins. Dear friends, since God so loved us, we also ought to love one another. No one has ever seen God; but if we love one another, God lives in us and his love is made complete in us.

1 John 4:16, 19, 21 – ...God is love. Whoever lives in love lives in God, and God in him.... We love because he first loved us.... And he has given us this command: Whoever loves God must also love his brother.

Article 56: God Is Righteous

Genesis 18:23-25 – Then Abraham approached him [the LORD] and said: “Will you sweep away the righteous with the wicked?... Far be it from you to do such a thing—to kill the righteous with the wicked, treating the righteous and the wicked alike.... Will not the Judge of all the earth do right?”

Psalm 9:7-8 – The LORD reigns forever; he has established his throne for judgment. He will judge the world in righteousness; he will govern the peoples with justice.

Psalm 33:4-5 – For the word of the LORD is right and true; he is faithful in all he does. The LORD loves righteousness and justice; the earth is full of his unfailing love.

Psalm 36:10-11 – Continue your love to those who know you, your righteousness to the upright in heart. May the foot of the proud not come against me, nor the hand of the wicked drive me away.

Psalm 89:14 – Righteousness and justice are the foundation of your throne; love and faithfulness go before you.

Psalm 98:8-9 – Let the rivers clap their hands, let the mountains sing together for joy; let them sing before the LORD, for he comes to judge the earth. He will judge the world in righteousness and the peoples with equity.

Isaiah 5:16 – But the LORD Almighty will be exalted by his justice, and the holy God will show himself holy by his righteousness.

Jeremiah 23:5-6 – “The days are coming,” declares the LORD, “when I will raise up to David a righteous Branch, a King who will reign wisely and do what is just and right in the land. In his days Judah will be saved and Israel will live in safety. This is the name by which he will be called: The LORD Our Righteousness.”

Amos 2:6-8 – This is what the LORD says: “For three sins of Israel, even for four, I will not turn back my wrath. They sell the righteous for silver, and the needy for a pair of sandals. They trample on the heads of the poor as upon the dust of the ground and deny justice to the oppressed. Father and son use the same girl and so profane my holy name. They lie down beside every altar on garments taken in pledge. In the house of their god they drink wine taken as fines.”

Amos 3:1-2 – Hear this word the LORD has spoken against you, O people of Israel—against the whole family I brought up out of Egypt: “You only have I chosen of all the families of the earth; therefore I will punish you for all your sins.”

Amos 5:21-24 – “I hate, I despise your religious feasts; I cannot stand your assemblies. Even though you bring me burnt offerings and grain offerings, I will not accept them. Though you bring choice fellowship offerings, I will have no regard for them. Away with the noise of your songs! I will not listen to the music of your harps. But let justice roll on like a river, righteousness like a never-failing stream!”

Habakkuk 2:4 – ...the righteous will live by his faith

Matthew 6:33 – “But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well.”

Matthew 25:31-32, 46 – “When the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the angels with him, he will sit on his throne in heavenly glory. All the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate the people one from another as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats.... Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life.”

John 5:28-29 – “Do not be amazed at this, for a time is coming when all who are in their graves will hear his voice and come out—those who have done good will rise to live, and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned.”

John 17:25 – “Righteous Father, though the world does not know you, I know you, and they know that you have sent me.”

Romans 1:16-17 – I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God for the salvation of everyone who believes: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile. For in the gospel a righteousness from God is revealed, a righteousness that is by faith from first to last, just as it is written: “The righteous will live by faith.”

Romans 3:21-24 – But now a righteousness from God, apart from law, has been made known, to which the Law and the Prophets testify. This righteousness from God comes through faith in Jesus Christ to all who believe. There is no difference, for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, and are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that came by Christ Jesus.

Romans 14:17 – For the kingdom of God is not a matter of eating and drinking, but of righteousness, peace and joy in the Holy Spirit....

2 Corinthians 5:21 – God made him [Christ] who had no sin to be sin for us, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God.

Ephesians 4:22-24 – You were taught, with regard to your former way of life, to put off your old self, which is being corrupted by its deceitful desires; to be made new in the attitude of your minds; and to put on the new self, created to be like God in true righteousness and holiness.

Hebrews 1:8 – But about the Son he says: “Your throne, O God, will last for ever and ever, and righteousness will be the scepter of your kingdom.

Revelation 20:12, 15 – And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life. The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books.... If anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.

Article 57: God Is Merciful

Deuteronomy 4:31 – For the LORD your God is a merciful God; he will not abandon or destroy you or forget the covenant with your forefathers, which he confirmed to them by oath.

2 Samuel 24:14 – David said to Gad, “I am in deep distress. Let us fall into the hands of the LORD, for his mercy is great; but do not let me fall into the hands of men.”

Psalms 25:6 – Remember, O LORD, your great mercy and love, for they are from of old.

Psalms 28:6 – Praise be to the LORD, for he has heard my cry for mercy.

Psalms 69:16 – Answer me, O LORD, out of the goodness of your love; in your great mercy turn to me.

Psalms 86:6-7 – Hear my prayer, O LORD; listen to my cry for mercy. In the day of my trouble I will call to you, for you will answer me.

Psalms 103:8-12 – The LORD is compassionate and gracious, slow to anger, abounding in love. He will not always accuse, nor will he harbor his anger forever; he does not treat us as our sins deserve or repay us according to our iniquities. For as high as the heavens are above the earth, so great is his love for those who fear him; as far as the east is from the west, so far has he removed our transgressions from us.

Psalms 145:8-9 – The LORD is gracious and compassionate, slow to anger and rich in love. The LORD is good to all; he has compassion on all he has made.

Isaiah 63:7-9 – I will tell of the kindnesses of the LORD, the deeds for which he is to be praised, according to all the LORD has done for us—yes, the many good things he has done for the house of Israel.... In all their distress he too was distressed, and the angel of his presence saved them. In his love and mercy he redeemed them; he lifted them up and carried them all the days of old.

Jeremiah 3:12 – “Go, proclaim this message toward the north: ‘Return, faithless Israel,’ declares the LORD, ‘I will frown on you no longer, for I am merciful,’ declares the LORD, ‘I will not be angry forever.’”

Daniel 9:18 – “Give ear, O God, and hear; open your eyes and see the desolation of the city that bears your Name. We do not make requests of you because we are righteous, but because of your great mercy.”

Hosea 6:6 – “For I desire mercy, not sacrifice, and acknowledgement of God rather than burnt offerings.”

Amos 5:14-15 – “Seek good, not evil, that you may live. Then the LORD God Almighty will be with you, just as you say he is. Hate evil, love good; maintain justice in the courts. Perhaps the LORD God Almighty will have mercy on the remnant of Joseph.”

Micah 7:18 – Who is a God like you, who pardons sin and forgives the transgression of the remnant of his inheritance? You do not stay angry forever but delight to show mercy.

Matthew 9:12-13 – On hearing this, Jesus said, “It is not the healthy who need a doctor, but the sick. But go and learn what this means: ‘I desire mercy, not sacrifice.’ For I have not come to call the righteous, but sinners.”

Luke 1:76-78 – “And you [John the Baptist], my child, will be called a prophet of the Most High; for you will go on before the Lord to prepare the way for him, to give his people the knowledge of salvation through the forgiveness of their sins, because of the tender mercy of our God....”

Luke 6:35-36 – “But love your enemies, do good to them, and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High, because he is kind to the ungrateful and wicked. Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful.”

Romans 15:8-9 – For I tell you that Christ has become a servant of the Jews on behalf of God’s truth, to confirm the promises made to the patriarchs so that the Gentiles may glorify God for his mercy, as it is written: “Therefore I will praise you among the Gentiles; I will sing hymns to your name.”

2 Corinthians 4:1 – Therefore, since through God’s mercy we have this ministry, we do not lose heart.

Ephesians 2:4-6 – But because of his great love for us, God, who is rich in mercy, made us alive with Christ even when we were dead in transgressions—it is by grace you have been saved. And God raised us up with Christ and seated us with him in the heavenly realms....

2 Timothy 1:1-2 – Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, according to the promise of life that is in Christ Jesus, To Timothy, my dear son: Grace, mercy and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

Titus 3:4-5 – But when the kindness and love of God our Savior appeared, he saved us, not because of righteous things we had done, but because of his mercy....

Hebrews 4:15-16 – For we do not have a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but we have one who has been tempted in every way, just as we are—yet was without sin. Let us then approach the throne of grace with confidence, so that we may receive mercy and find grace to help us in our time of need.

James 3:17-18 – But the wisdom that comes from heaven is first of all pure; then peace-loving, considerate, submissive, full of mercy and good fruit, impartial and sincere. Peacemakers who sow in peace raise a harvest of righteousness.

1 Peter 1:3 – Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! In his great mercy he has given us new birth into a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead....

Article 58: God Is All-powerful (Omnipotent)

Genesis 17:1 – When Abram was ninety-nine years old, the LORD appeared to him and said, “I am God Almighty; walk before me and be blameless.”

Genesis 18:13-14 – Then the LORD said to Abraham, “Why did Sarah laugh and say ‘Will I really have a child, now that I am old?’ Is anything too hard for the LORD? I will return to you at the appointed time next year and Sarah will have a son.”

Genesis 35:9-11 – After Jacob returned from Paddan Aram, God appeared to him again and blessed him. God said to him, “Your name is Jacob, but you will no longer be called Jacob; your name will be Israel.” So he named him Israel. And God said to him, “I am God Almighty; be fruitful and increase in number. A nation and a community of nations will come from you, and kings will come from your body.”

Exodus 6:2-3 – God also said to Moses, “I am the LORD. I appeared to Abraham, to Isaac and to Jacob as God Almighty, but by my name the LORD I did not make myself known to them.

Exodus 15:1-2, 6, 11 – Then Moses and the Israelites sang this song to the LORD: “I will sing to the LORD, for he is highly exalted. The horse and its rider he has hurled into the sea. The LORD is my strength and my song; he has become my salvation.... Your right hand, O LORD, was majestic in power. Your right hand, O LORD, shattered the enemy.... Who among the gods is like you, O LORD? Who is like you—majestic in holiness, awesome in glory, working wonders?”

Psalms 2:8-9 – “Ask of me, and I will make the nations your inheritance, the ends of the earth your possession. You will rule them with an iron scepter; you will dash them to pieces like pottery.”

Psalms 9:7-10 – The LORD reigns forever; he has established his throne for judgment. He will judge the world in righteousness; he will govern the peoples with justice. The LORD is a refuge for the oppressed, a stronghold in times of trouble. Those who know your name will trust in you, for you, LORD, have never forsaken those who seek you.

Psalms 89:8 – O LORD God Almighty, who is like you? You are mighty, O LORD, and your faithfulness surrounds you.

Psalms 91:1-2 – He who dwells in the shelter of the Most High will rest in the shadow of the Almighty. I will say of the LORD, “He is my refuge and my fortress, my God, in whom I trust.”

Psalms 96:9-13 – Worship the LORD in the splendor of his holiness; tremble before him, all the earth. Say among the nations, “The LORD reigns.” The world is firmly established, it cannot be moved; he will judge the peoples with equity. Let the heavens rejoice, let the earth be glad; let the sea resound, and all that is in it; let the fields be jubilant, and everything in them. Then all the trees of the forests will sing for joy...before the LORD, for he comes...to judge the earth....

Isaiah 47:4 – Our Redeemer—the LORD Almighty is his name—is the Holy One of Israel.

Amos 5:14-15 – “Seek good, not evil, that you may live. Then the LORD God Almighty will be with you, just as you say he is. Hate evil, love good; maintain justice in the courts. Perhaps the LORD God Almighty will have mercy on the remnant of Joseph.”

Matthew 8:24-27 – Without warning, a furious storm came up on the lake, so that the waves swept over the boat. But Jesus was sleeping. The disciples went and woke him, saying, “Lord, save us! We’re going to drown!” He replied, “You of little faith, why are you so afraid?” Then

he got up and rebuked the winds and the waves, and it was completely calm. The men were amazed and asked, "What kind of man is this? Even the winds and the waves obey him!"

John 11:21-26 – "Lord," Martha said to Jesus, "if you had been here, my brother would not have died.... Jesus said to her, "Your brother will rise again.... I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in me will live, even though he dies; and whoever lives and believes in me will never die...."

John 11:43-44 – ...Jesus called in a loud voice, "Lazarus, come out!" The dead man came out, his hands and feet wrapped with strips of line, and a cloth around his face. Jesus said to them, "Take off the grave clothes and let him go."

Romans 4:18-21 – Against all hope, Abraham in hope believed and so became the father of many nations, just as it had been said to him, "So shall your offspring be." Without weakening in his faith, he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead—since he was about a hundred years old—and that Sarah's womb was also dead. Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.

Ephesians 3:20-21 – Now to him who is able to do immeasurably more than all we ask or imagine, according to his power that is at work within us, to him be glory in the church and in Christ Jesus throughout all generations, for ever and ever! Amen.

Hebrews 11:17-19 – By faith Abraham, when God tested him, offered Isaac as a sacrifice. He who had received the promises was about to sacrifice his one and only son, even though God had said to him, "It is through Isaac that your offspring will be reckoned." Abraham reasoned that God could raise the dead, and figuratively speaking, he did receive Isaac back from death.

Revelation 4:8 – Each of the four living creatures had six wings and was covered with eyes all around, even under his wings. Day and night they never stop saying: "Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come."

Revelation 19:6-7 – Then I heard what sounded like a great multitude, like the roar of rushing waters and like loud peals of thunder, shouting: "Hallelujah! For our Lord God Almighty reigns. Let us rejoice and be glad and give him glory! For the wedding of the Lamb has come, and his bride has made herself ready."

Matthew 28:18-19 – Then Jesus came to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations...."

Article 59: God Is All-knowing (Omniscient)

Genesis 6:5 – The LORD saw how great man’s wickedness on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time.

1 Samuel 2:1-3 – Then Hannah prayed and said: “My heart rejoices in the LORD; in the LORD my horn is lifted high.... Do not keep talking so proudly or let your mouth speak such arrogance, for the LORD is a God who knows, and by him deeds are weighed.”

Psalms 44:20-21 – If we had forgotten the name of our God or spread out our hands to a foreign god, would not God have discovered it, since he knows the secrets of the heart?

Psalms 94:7-9 – They say, “The LORD does not see; the God of Jacob pays no heed.” Does he who teaches man lack knowledge? The LORD knows the thoughts of man; he knows that they are futile.

Psalms 139:1-4 – O LORD, you have searched me and you know me. You know when I sit and when I rise; you perceive my thoughts from afar. You discern my going out and my lying down; you are familiar with all my ways. Before a word is on my tongue you know it completely, O LORD.

Psalms 139:15-16 – My frame was not hidden from you when I was made in the secret place. When I was woven together in the depths of the earth, your eyes saw my unformed body. All the days ordained for me were written in your book before one of them came to be.

Psalms 139:23-24 – Search me, O God, and know my heart; test me and know my anxious thoughts. See if there is any offensive way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

Psalms 142:3 – When my spirit grows faint within me, it is you who know my way....

Psalms 147:5 – Great is our Lord and mighty in power; his understanding has no limit.

Isaiah 9:6 – For to us a child is born, to us a son is given, and the government will be on his shoulders. And he will be called Wonderful Counselor....

Isaiah 40:13-14 – Who has understood the mind of the LORD, or instructed him as his counselor? Whom did the LORD consult to enlighten him, and who taught him the right way? Who was it that taught him knowledge or showed him the path of understanding?

Isaiah 46:9-10 – “... I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like me. I make known the end from the beginning, from ancient times what is still to come....”

Isaiah 55:8-9 – “For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways,” declares the LORD. “As the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts.”

Jeremiah 1:4-5 – The word of the LORD came to me, saying, “Before I formed you in the womb I knew you, before you were born I set you apart; I appointed you as a prophet to the nations.”

Daniel 2:19-22 – During the night the mystery was revealed to Daniel in a vision. Then Daniel praised the God of heaven and said: “Praise be to the name of God for ever and ever; wisdom and power are his.... He gives wisdom to the wise and knowledge to the discerning. He reveals deep and hidden things; he knows what lies in darkness, and light dwells with him.”

Matthew 10:26 – “So do not be afraid of them. There is nothing concealed that will not be disclosed, or hidden that will not be made known.”

Matthew 10:29-30– “Are not two sparrows sold for a penny? Yet not one of them will fall to the ground apart from the will of your Father. And even the very hairs of your head are all numbered.”

Mark 13:32 – “No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father.”

Luke 11:31 – “The Queen of the South will rise at the judgment with the men of this generation and condemn them; for she came from the ends of the earth to listen to Solomon’s wisdom, and now one greater than Solomon is here.”

John 2:23-25 – ...many people saw the miraculous signs he was doing and believed in his name. But Jesus would not entrust himself to them, for he knew all men. He did not need man’s testimony about man, for he knew what was in a man.

John 4:28-29 – Then, leaving her water jar, the woman went back to the town and said to the people, “Come, see a man who told me everything I ever did. Could this be the Christ?”

John 21:17 – The third time he said to him, “Simon son of John, do you love me?” Peter was hurt because Jesus asked him the third time, “Do you love me?” He said, “Lord, you know all things; you know that I love you.” Jesus said, “Feed my sheep.”

Romans 11:33-34 – Oh, the depth of the riches of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable his judgments, and his paths beyond tracing out! “Who has known the mind of the Lord? Or who has been his counselor?”

Colossians 2:2-3 – ...in order that they may know the mystery of God, namely, Christ, in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

Hebrews 4:13 – Nothing in all creation is hidden from God’s sight. Everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give account.

1 John 3:19-20 – This then is how we know that we belong to the truth, and how we set our hearts at rest in his presence whenever our hearts condemn us. For God is greater than our hearts, and he knows everything.

Article 60: God Is Everywhere Present (Omnipresent)

Deuteronomy 4:37-39 – Because [the LORD your God] loved your forefathers and chose their descendents after them, he brought you out of Egypt by his Presence and his great strength, to drive out before you nations greater and stronger than you and to bring you into their land to give it to you for your inheritance, as it is today.... take to heart this day that the LORD is God in heaven above and on the earth below....

1 Kings 8:22-23, 27 – Then Solomon stood before the altar of the LORD in front of the whole assembly of Israel, spread out his hands toward heaven and said:.... “But will God really dwell on earth? The heavens, even the highest heavens, cannot contain you. How much less this temple I have built!”

Job 38:1, 4-7 – Then the LORD answered Job out of the storm. He said: “.... Where were you when I laid the earth’s foundation? Tell me, if you understand. Who marked off its dimensions? Surely you know. Who stretched a measuring line across it? On what were its footings set, or who laid its cornerstone—while the morning stars sang together and all the angels shouted for joy?”

Psalms 34:15-18 – The eyes of the LORD are on the righteous and his ears are attentive to their cry; the face of the LORD is against those who do evil, to cut off the memory of them from the earth. The righteous cry out, and the LORD hears them; he delivers them from all their troubles. The LORD is close to the brokenhearted and saves those who are crushed in spirit.

Psalms 95:3-6 – For the LORD is the great God, the great King above all gods. In his hand are the depths of the earth, and the mountain peaks belong to him. The sea is his, for he made it, and his hands formed the dry land. Come, let us bow down in worship, let us kneel before the LORD our Maker...

Psalms 113:5-8 – Who is like the LORD our God, the One who sits enthroned on high, who stoops down to look on the heavens and the earth? He raises the poor from the dust and lifts the needy from the ash heap; he seats them with princes....

Psalms 139:7-10 – Where can I go from your Spirit? Where can I flee from your presence? If I go up to the heavens, you are there; if I make my bed in the depths, you are there. If I rise on the wings of the dawn, if I settle on the far side of the sea, even there your hand will guide me, your right hand will hold me fast.

Proverbs 15:3 – The eyes of the LORD are everywhere, keeping watch on the wicked and the good.

Isaiah 66:1-2 – This is what the LORD says: “Heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool. Where is the house you will build for me? Where will my resting place be? Has not my hand made all these things, and so they came into being?” declares the LORD.

Jeremiah 23:23-24 – “Am I only a God nearby,” declares the LORD, “and not a God far away? Can anyone hide in secret places so that I cannot see him?” declares the LORD. “Do not I fill heaven and earth?”

Amos 9:1-4 – I saw the LORD standing by the altar, and he said: “.... Though they dig down to the depths of the grave, from there my hand will take them. Though they climb up to the heavens, from there I will bring them down. Though they hide themselves on the top of Carmel, there I will hunt them down and seize them. Though they hide from me at the bottom of the

sea, there I will command the serpent to bite them. Though they are driven into exile by their enemies, there I will command the sword to slay them....”

Jonah 1:1-3 – The word of the LORD came to Jonah son of Amittai: “Go to the great city of Nineveh and preach against it, because its wickedness has come up before me.” But Jonah ran away from the LORD and headed for Tarshish.

Jonah 1:4, 7, 15, 17 – Then the LORD sent a great wind on the sea, and such a violent storm arose that the ship threatened to break up.... Then the sailors said to each other, “Come, let us cast lots to find out who is responsible for this calamity.” They cast lots and the lot fell on Jonah.... Then they took Jonah and threw him overboard, and the raging sea grew calm.... But the LORD provided a great fish to swallow Jonah, and Jonah was inside the fish three days and three nights.

Jonah 2:1-2 – From inside the fish Jonah prayed to the LORD his God. He said, “In my distress I called to the LORD, and he answered me. From the depths of the grave I called for help, and you listened to my cry.”

Habakkuk 2:14 – For the earth will be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.

Mark 16:5-7 – As they entered the tomb, they saw a young man dressed in a white robe sitting on the right side, and they were alarmed. “Don’t be alarmed,” he said. “You are looking for Jesus the Nazarene, who was crucified. He has risen! He is not here. See the place where they laid him. But go, tell his disciples and Peter, ‘He is going ahead of you into Galilee. There you will see him, just as he told you.’”

Luke 24:13-16, 30-31 – Now that same day two of them were going to a village called Emmaus, about seven miles from Jerusalem. They were talking with each other about everything that had happened.... Jesus himself came up and walked along with them; but they were kept from recognizing him.... When he was at the table with them, he took bread, gave thanks, broke it and began to give it to them. Then their eyes were opened and they recognized him, and he disappeared from their sight.

John 20:19 – On the evening of that first day of the week, when the disciples were together, with the doors locked for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood among them and said, “Peace be with you.”

John 16:7, 12-13 – “But I tell you the truth: it is for your good that I am going away. Unless I go away, the Counselor will not come to you; but if I go I will send him to you.... I have much more to say to you, more than you can now bear. But when he, the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all truth....

Matthew 28:18-20 – Then Jesus came to them and said, “.... surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.”

Article 61: God Is Eternal

When the Bible reveals to us that God is eternal, it is telling us that he had no beginning and will have no end. He always has been and always will be.

Genesis 1:1 – In the beginning God....

Exodus 3:13-14 – Moses said to God, "Suppose I go to the Israelites and say to them, 'The God of your fathers has sent me to you,' and they ask me, 'What is his name?' Then what shall I tell them?" God said to Moses, "I AM WHO I AM. This is what you are to say to the Israelites: 'I AM' has sent me to you.'"

Exodus 15:18 – "The LORD will reign for ever and ever."

Deuteronomy 33:27 – "The eternal God is your refuge, and underneath are the everlasting arms..."

Psalms 10:16 – The LORD is King for ever and ever....

Psalms 48:14 – For this God is our God for ever and ever; he will be our guide even to the end.

Psalms 90:1-2 – Lord, you have been our dwelling place throughout all generations. Before the mountains were born or you brought forth the earth and the world, from everlasting to everlasting you are God.

Psalms 93:2 – Your throne was established long ago; you are from all eternity.

Psalms 103:17 – But from everlasting to everlasting the LORD'S love is with those who fear him, and his righteousness with their children's children—

Psalms 145:1-4 – I will exalt you, my God the King; I will praise your name for ever and ever. Every day I will praise you and extol your name for ever and ever. Great is the LORD and most worthy of praise; his greatness no one can fathom. One generation will commend your works to another; they will tell of your mighty acts.

Isaiah 9:6-7 – For to us a child is born, to us a son is given, and the government will be on his shoulders. And he will be called Wonderful, Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there will be no end. He will reign on David's throne and over his kingdom, establishing and upholding it with justice and righteousness from that time on and forever....

Daniel 4:34 – At the end of that time, I, Nebuchadnezzar, raised my eyes toward heaven, and my sanity was restored. Then I praised the Most High; I honored and glorified him who lives forever. His dominion is an eternal dominion; his kingdom endures from generation to generation.

Micah 4:5 – All the nations may walk in the name of their gods; we will walk in the name of the LORD our God for ever and ever.

Habakkuk 3:6 – He stood, and shook the earth; he looked, and made the nations tremble. The ancient mountains crumbled and the age-old hills collapsed. His ways are eternal.

John 8:56-59 – "Your father Abraham rejoiced at the thought of seeing my day; he saw it and was glad." "You are not yet fifty years old," the Jews said to him, "and you have seen Abraham!"

"I tell you the truth," Jesus answered, "before Abraham was born, I am!" At this, they picked up stones to stone him....

John 10:27-30 – "My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me. I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; no one can snatch them out of my hand. My Father, who has given them to me, is greater than all; no one can snatch them out of my Father's hand. I and the Father are one."

John 17:1-5 – After Jesus said this, he looked toward heaven and prayed: "Father, the time has come. Glorify your Son, that your Son may glorify you. For you granted him authority over all people that he might give eternal life to all those you have given him. Now this is eternal life: that they may know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom you have sent. I have brought you glory on earth by completing the work you gave me to do. And now, Father, glorify me in your presence with the glory I had with you before the world began."

Romans 1:20 – For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature—have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse.

Ephesians 3:10-11 – His intent was that now, through the church, the manifold wisdom of God should be made known to the rulers and authorities in the heavenly realms, according to his eternal purpose which he accomplished in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Philippians 4:19-20 – And my God will meet all your needs according to his glorious riches in Christ Jesus. To our God and Father be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

1 Timothy 1:17– Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

Hebrews 1:8 – But about the Son he says: "Your throne, O God, will last for ever and ever, and righteousness will be the scepter of your kingdom."

Revelation 1:8 – "I am the Alpha and the Omega," says the Lord God, "who is, and who was, and who is to come, the Almighty."

Revelation 4:8 – Each of the four living creatures had six wings and was covered with eyes all around, even under his wings. Day and night they never stop saying: "Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come."

Jude 24-25 – To him who is able to keep you from falling and to present you before his glorious presence without fault and with great joy—to the only God our Savior be glory, majesty, power and authority, through Jesus Christ our Lord, before all ages, now and forevermore! Amen.

PART IX: THE PERSON AND WORK OF
THE HOLY SPIRIT

Article 62: (Work in Progress)

The Holy Spirit is God

The Holy Spirit is a Person

The Holy Spirit Indwells

The Holy Spirit Baptizes

The Holy Spirit Fills

The Holy Spirit Empowers

The Holy Spirit Comforts

The Holy Spirit is Holy

The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of Jesus

The Holy Spirit Transforms

The Holy Spirit Glorifies Jesus

(tentative topics for articles)

PART X: BIBLICAL THEMES

Article 63: Apostolic Ministry

Matthew 10:1-2 – He called his twelve disciples to him and gave them authority to drive out evil spirits and to heal every disease and sickness. These are the names of the twelve apostles:

....

Matthew 28:18-20 – Then Jesus came to [the eleven disciples] and said, “All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.”

Acts 2:14, 41-43 – Then Peter stood up with the Eleven, raised his voice and addressed the crowd:.... Those who accepted his message were baptized, and about three thousand were added to their number that day. They devoted themselves to the apostles’ teaching and to the fellowship, to the breaking of bread and to prayer. Everyone was filled with awe, and many wonders and miraculous signs were done by the apostles.

Acts 13:1-3 – In the church at Antioch there were prophets and teachers: Barnabas, Simeon called Niger, Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen (who had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch) and Saul. While they were worshipping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, “Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them. So after they had fasted and prayed, they placed their hands on them and sent them off.

Acts 13:4-5 – The two of them, sent on their way by the Holy Spirit, went down to Seleucia and sailed from there to Cyprus. When they arrived at Salamis, they proclaimed the word of God in the Jewish synagogues. John was with them as their helper.

Acts 14:4, 14 – The people of the city were divided; some sided with the Jews, others with the apostles.... But when the apostles Barnabas and Paul heard of this, they tore their clothes and rushed out into the crowd, shouting:

Romans 1:1 – Paul, a servant of Christ Jesus, called to be an apostle and set apart for the gospel of God—

Romans 16:7 – Greet Andronicus and Junias, my relatives who have been in prison with me. They are outstanding among the apostles, and they were in Christ before I was.

1 Corinthians 4:9-13 – For it seems to me that God has put us apostles on display at the end of the procession, like men condemned to die in the arena. We have been made a spectacle to the whole universe, to angels as well as to men. We are fools for Christ, but you are so wise in Christ! We are weak, but you are strong! You are honored, we are dishonored! To this very hour we go hungry and thirsty, we are in rags, we are brutally treated, we are homeless. We work hard with our own hands. When we are cursed, we bless; when we are persecuted, we endure it; when we are slandered, we answer kindly. Up to this moment we have become and scum of the earth, the refuse of the world.

1 Corinthians 4:15-16 – Even though you have ten thousand guardians in Christ, you do not have many fathers, for in Christ Jesus I became your father through the gospel. Therefore I urge you to imitate me.

1 Corinthians 12:28-31; 13:1 – And in the church God has appointed first of all apostles, second prophets, third teachers, then workers of miracles, also those having gifts of healing, those able to help others, those with gifts of administration, and those speaking in different kinds of tongues. Are all apostles? Are all prophets? Are all teachers? Do all work miracles? Do all have gifts of healing? Do all speak in tongues? Do all interpret? But eagerly desire the greater gifts. And now I will show you the most excellent way. If I speak in the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I am only a resounding gong or a clanging cymbal.

2 Corinthians 12:7-10 – To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me. Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. But he said to me, “My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness.” Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ’s power may rest on me. That is why, for Christ’s sake, I delight in weaknesses, in insults, in hardships, in persecutions, in difficulties. For when I am weak, then I am strong.

2 Corinthians 12:11-12 – I have made a fool of myself, but you drove me to it. I ought to have been commended by you, for I am not in the least inferior to the “super-apostles,” even though I am nothing. The things that mark an apostle—signs, wonders and miracles—were done among you with great perseverance.

Galatians 1:1 – Paul, an apostle—sent not from men nor by man, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him from the dead—

Ephesians 2:19-20 – Consequently, you are no longer foreigners and aliens, but fellow citizens with God’s people and members of God’s household, built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, with Christ Jesus himself as the chief cornerstone.

Ephesians 4:11-13 – It was [Christ] who gave some to be apostles, some to be prophets, some to be evangelists, and some to be pastors and teachers, to prepare God’s people for works of service, so that the body of Christ may be built up until we all reach unity in the faith and in the knowledge of the Son of God and become mature, attaining to the whole measure of the fullness of Christ.

1 Thessalonians 1:1, 2:6-7 – Paul, Silas and Timothy, To the church of the Thessalonians in God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace and peace to you.... As apostles of Christ we could have been a burden to you, but we were gentle among you, like a mother caring for her little children.

2 Timothy 1:11-12 – And of this gospel I was appointed a herald and an apostle and a teacher. That is why I am suffering as I am. Yet I am not ashamed, because I know whom I have believed, and am convinced that he is able to guard what I have entrusted to him for that day.

Hebrews 3:1 – Therefore, holy brothers, who share in the heavenly calling, fix your thoughts on Jesus, the apostle and high priest whom we confess.

Article 64: Life out of Death: Living in Our Baptism— Reading 1

Matthew 10:37-40 – “Anyone who loves his father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; anyone who loves his son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me; and anyone who does not take his cross and follow me is not worthy of me. Whoever finds his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life for my sake will find it.”

Matthew 13:44 – “The kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field. When a man found it, he hid it again and then in his joy went and sold all he had and bought that field.”

Matthew 13:45-46 – “Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant looking for fine pearls. When he found one of great value, he went away and sold everything he had and bought it.”

Matthew 16:24-26 – Then Jesus said to his disciples, “If anyone would come after me, he must deny himself and take up his cross and follow me. For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for me will find it. What good will it be for a man if he gains the whole world, yet forfeits his soul?...”

Mark 10:35-40 – Then James and John, the sons of Zebedee, came to him. “Teacher,” they said, “we want you to do for us whatever we ask.” “What do you want me to do for you?” he asked. They replied, “Let one of us sit at your right and the other at your left in your glory.” “You don’t know what you are asking,” Jesus said. “Can you drink the cup I drink or be baptized with the baptism I am baptized with?” “We can,” they answered. Jesus said to them, “You will drink the cup I drink and be baptized with the baptism I am baptized with, but to sit at my right or left is not for me to grant. These places belong to those for whom they have been prepared.”

John 12:23-25 – Jesus replied, “The hour has come for the Son of Man to be glorified. I tell you the truth, unless a kernel of wheat falls to the ground and dies, it remains only a single seed. But if it dies, it produces many seeds. The man who loves his life will lose it, while the man who hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life.”

Romans 6:1-4 – What shall we say, then? Shall we go on sinning so that grace may increase? By no means! We died to sin; how can we live in it any longer? Or don’t you know that all of us who were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death? We were therefore buried with him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life.

Romans 6:5-8 – If we have been united with him like this in his death, we will certainly also be united with him in his resurrection. For we know that our old self was crucified with him so that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves to sin—because anyone who has died has been freed from sin. Now if we died with Christ, we believe that we will also live with him.

Romans 6:11-13 – In the same way, count yourselves dead to sin but alive to God in Christ Jesus. Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body so that you obey its evil desires. Do not offer the parts of your body to sin, as instruments of wickedness, but rather offer yourselves to God, as those who have been brought from death to life; and offer the parts of your body to him as instruments of righteousness.

2 Corinthians 1:8-10 – We do not want you to be uninformed, brothers, about the hardships we suffered in the province of Asia. We were under great pressure, far beyond our ability to endure, so that we despaired even of life. Indeed, in our hearts we felt the sentence of death. But this happened that we might not rely on ourselves, but on God, who raises the dead. He has delivered us from such a deadly peril, and he will deliver us....

2 Corinthians 4:7-9 – But we have this treasure in jars of clay to show that this all surpassing power is from God and not from us. We are hard pressed on every side, but not crushed; perplexed, but not in despair; persecuted, but not abandoned; struck down, but not destroyed.

2 Corinthians 4:10-12 – We always carry around in our body the death of Jesus, so that the life of Jesus may also be revealed in our body. For we who are alive are always being given over to death for Jesus' sake, so that his life may be revealed in our mortal body. So then, death is at work in us, but life is at work in you.

2 Corinthians 6:4-6 – ...as servants of God we commend ourselves in every way: in great endurance; in troubles, hardships and distresses; in beatings, imprisonments and riots; in hard work, sleepless nights and hunger; in purity, understanding, patience and kindness; in the Holy Spirit and in sincere love;

2 Corinthians 6:7-10 – in truthful speech and in the power of God; with weapons of righteousness in the right hand and in the left; through glory and dishonor, bad report and good report; genuine, yet regarded as impostors; known, yet regarded as unknown; dying, and yet we live on; beaten, and yet not killed; sorrowful, yet always rejoicing; poor, yet making many rich; having nothing, and yet possessing everything.

2 Corinthians 11:22-23 – Are they Hebrews? So am I. Are they Israelites? So am I. Are they Abraham's descendents? So am I. Are they servants of Christ? (I am out of my mind to talk like this.) I am more. I have worked much harder, been in prison more frequently, been flogged more severely, and been exposed to death again and again.

2 Corinthians 11:24-26 – Five times I received from the Jews the forty lashes minus one. Three times I was beaten with rods, once I was stoned, three times I was shipwrecked. I spent a night and a day in the open sea, I have been constantly on the move. I have been in danger from rivers, in danger from bandits, in danger from my own countrymen, in danger from Gentiles, in danger in the city, in danger in the country, in danger at sea; and in danger from false brothers.

2 Corinthians 11:27-30 – I have labored and toiled and have often gone without sleep; I have known hunger and thirst and have often gone without food; I have been cold and naked. Besides everything else, I face daily the pressure of my concern for all the churches. Who is weak, and I do not feel weak? Who is led into sin, and I do not inwardly burn? If I must boast, I will boast of the things that show my weakness.

Article 65: Life out of Death: Living in Our Baptism— Reading 2

2 Corinthians 12:7-10 – To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me. Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. But he said to me, “My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness.” Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ’s power may rest on me. That is why, for Christ’s sake, I delight in weaknesses, in insults, in hardships, in persecutions, in difficulties. For when I am weak, then I am strong.

Galatians 2:20 – I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me.

Philippians 2:5-8 – Your attitude should be the same as that of Christ Jesus: Who, being in very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be grasped, but made himself nothing, taking the very nature of a servant, being made in human likeness. And being found in appearance as a man, he humbled himself and became obedient to death—even death on a cross!

Philippians 2:9-11 – Therefore God exalted him to the highest place and gave him the name that is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Philippians 3:7-10 – But whatever was to my profit I now consider loss for the sake of Christ. What is more, I consider everything a loss compared to the surpassing greatness of knowing Christ Jesus my Lord, for whose sake I have lost all things. I consider them rubbish, that I may gain Christ and be found in him, not having a righteousness of my own that comes from the law, but that which is through faith in Christ—the righteousness that comes from God and is by faith. I want to know Christ and the power of his resurrection and the fellowship of sharing in his sufferings, becoming like him in his death....

Colossians 3:1-3 – Since, then, you have been raised with Christ, set your hearts on things above, where Christ is seated at the right hand of God. Set your minds on things above, not on earthly things. For you died, and your life is now hidden with Christ in God.

Colossians 3:5-10 – Put to death, therefore, whatever belongs to your earthly nature: sexual immorality, impurity, lust, evil desires and greed, which is idolatry. Because of these, the wrath of God is coming. You used to walk in these ways, in the life you once lived. But now you must rid yourselves of all such things as these: anger, rage, malice, slander, and filthy language from your lips. Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge in the image of its Creator.

Colossians 3:12-15 – Therefore, as God’s chosen people, holy and dearly loved, clothe yourselves with compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness and patience. Bear with each other and forgive whatever grievances you may have against one another. Forgive as the Lord forgave you. And over all these virtues put on love, which binds them all together in perfect unity. Let

the peace of Christ rule in your hearts, since as members of one body you were called to peace. And be thankful.

2 Timothy 1:11-12 – And of this gospel I was appointed a herald and an apostle and a teacher. That is why I am suffering as I am. Yet I am not ashamed, because I know whom I have believed, and am convinced that he is able to guard what I have entrusted to him for that day.

2 Timothy 2:8-10 – Remember Jesus Christ, raised from the dead, descended from David. This is my gospel, for which I am suffering even to the point of being chained like a criminal. But God’s word is not chained. Therefore I endure everything for the sake of the elect, that they too may obtain the salvation that is in Christ Jesus, with eternal glory.

2 Timothy 3:10-12 – You, however, know all about my teaching, my way of life, my purpose, faith, patience, love, endurance, persecutions, sufferings—what kinds of things happened to me in Antioch, Iconium and Lystra, the persecutions I endured. Yet the Lord rescued me from all of them. In fact, everyone who wants to live a godly life in Christ Jesus will be persecuted.

2 Timothy 4:6-8 – For I am already being poured out like a drink offering, and the time has come for my departure. I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith. Now there is in store for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will award to me on that day—and not only to me, but also to all who have longed for his appearing.

Revelation 12:11 – “They overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony; they did not love their lives so much as to shrink from death.

PART XI: GOD'S STORY IN THE SCRIPTURES

Article 66: (Work in Progress)

PART XII: AN OVERVIEW OF JUDEO- CHRISTIAN HISTORY

Article 67: A View of Judeo-Christian History

1994 (Overview incomplete)

The following perspective on the Protestant view of Judeo-Christian history, especially North American Protestantism, was written by a highly respected scholar, Robert Webber, who was himself a North American Protestant.⁴⁵

One of the most significant problems in Protestantism, and particularly North American Protestantism, is its lack of interest in history, which grows out of the relative youthfulness of the North American culture and its rugged individualism. Among Protestant Christians the frequent movements to go back to Scripture alone without an appropriate appreciation of traditions based on Scripture also contribute to this problem.

From a theological point of view, the lack of interest in history grows out of the mistaken notion that the history of God's involvement in the faith of his people is exclusively relegated to the biblical time period. To be sure, the biblical time period is of paramount importance and constitutes the source of all our theological thinking. But to neglect the ongoing activity of the Holy Spirit in the life of the church is at worst heresy and at best spiritual ignorance.

God is the God not only of biblical history, but of all history, and particularly the history of the church. In the history of the church we see that God continually initiates a relationship with his people. And the people, just as in biblical history, continue the pattern of responding to God and then falling away...

In this sense, the pattern of church history is not vastly different than the pattern of the children of Israel. However, in reading the Old Testament, we do not begin with this or that revival movement in Israel. Instead, we see the whole and interpret the part from the whole.

The same principle needs to be applied to the history of the church and its worship. It is not appropriate to leap from the pages of Scripture to the Reformation or to the evangelical awakenings of the nineteenth century or to one of the many renewal movements of the twentieth century, as though each renewal is a new beginning that stands alone. Instead, we need to envision the whole of history with all of its up periods and down periods, recognizing that all of that history is God's history and our history.

By accepting our connectedness with all of history and with all of God's worshipping communities, our own faith experience and our own worship experience are bound to be enriched. For in that history we will find rich treasures of resources given to the church not only in a particular time and place, but for us to adapt and use in our own cultural setting. On the other hand, we discover the mistakes of our historical parents, learn from them, and discern when our own worship seems to be taking an unfruitful path.

⁴⁵ This quotation is taken from Webber's book *Worship Old & New*, p. 93.

Article 68: Judeo-Christian History: An Overview

Matthew 13:24-30 – Jesus told them another parable: “The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field. But while everyone was sleeping, his enemy came and sowed weeds among the wheat, and went away. When the wheat sprouted and formed heads, then the weeds also appeared. The owner’s servants came to him and said, ‘Sir, didn’t you sow good seed in your field? Where then did the weeds come from?’ ‘An enemy did this,’ he replied. The servants asked him, ‘Do you want us to go and pull them up?’ ‘No,’ he answered, ‘because while you are pulling the weeds, you may root up the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest. At that time I will tell the harvesters: First collect the weeds and tie them in bundles to be burned; then gather the wheat and bring it into my barn.’”

Matthew 13:52 – He said to them, “Therefore every teacher of the law who has been instructed about the kingdom of heaven is like the owner of a house who brings out of his storeroom new treasures as well as old.”

Our Perspective of this History

It is our deep desire to respect fully every tradition within the one, holy, universal, apostolic faith once delivered to the saints. We long to be completely fair to the Judeo-Christian history of every people and culture. As is true of all historians, we acknowledge the unwanted prejudices we carry due to our background as western Gentile Christians. We are still learning and thankful for all God continues to teach us.

We understand the Judeo-Christian history of God’s people to comprise one continuous, majestic unfolding of God’s unstoppable purpose to redeem mankind from every consequence of our sin. This history, then, begins with Adam and Eve, and traces the line of faith in and knowledge of God throughout the history of Israel and the Church right up to the present.

At the center of these events stands Yeshua, the Jewish Messiah and Lord of the nations. In him Jewish and Christian history are joined. He joins Jew and Gentile into one body.

The historical periods we have identified below, up to the time of Christ, are our own. Thereafter we have grouped events by century. This represents our attempt to come free from viewing Judeo-Christian history only through the prism of western Church history and its developments. We want our perspective to include the Messianic Jewish faith, the history of the Church in lands east of the former borders of the Roman Empire (east of the Euphrates River), and more recently of the worldwide Church. We admit that we are still at the beginning of this process. We include our major sources at the end of this article.

In the Beginning

(Genesis 1-11)

Adam and Eve felt no shame in God's Presence – Genesis 2:25

Enoch walked with God – Genesis 5:24

Noah walked with God – Genesis 6:9

Note: Early dates are based on a 1446 BC date for the Exodus. [Later dates are based on a 1260 BC date for the Exodus.]

The Patriarchs

(Genesis 12-50)

2166-1991 [2000-1825] Abraham

2066-1886 [1900-1720] Isaac

2006-1859 [1840-1693] Jacob

1915-1805 [1749-1639] Joseph

The Exodus, the Desert and the Law

(Exodus-Deuteronomy)

1526 [1340] Birth of Moses

1446 [1260] Exodus – the Hebrews (people of Israel) leave Egypt

1446-1406 [1260-1220] Desert wanderings of the people of Israel

The Promised Land

(Joshua)

1406 [1220] Joshua leads Israel into the Promised Land

The Judges

(Judges-1 Samuel 10)

1375-1050/1030 [1210-1050/1030] The period of the Judges

Samson

Samuel

The United Kingdom

(1 Samuel 11-1 Kings 11; 1 Chronicles 10-2 Chronicles 9)

1050/1030-1010 The reign of Saul

1010-971 The reign of David

971-931 The reign of Solomon

The Divided Kingdom

(1 Kings 12-2 Kings 25; 2 Chronicles 10-36)

Note: Kings of Israel (northern Kingdom); *Kings of Judah* (southern Kingdom)

- 931-911 Jeroboam I – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 931-915 Rehoboam – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 915-912 Abijah/Abijam – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 912-871 Asa – did what was **right** in the eyes of the Lord
- 911-910 Nadab – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 910-887 Baasha – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 887-886 Elah – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 886 Zimri – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 886-875 Omri – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 875-853 Ahab – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 871-849 Jehoshaphat – did what was **right** in the eyes of the Lord
- 853-852 Ahaziah – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 852-841 Joram/Jehoram – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 849-842 Jehoram/Joram – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 842-841 Ahaziah – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 841-835 Athaliah (Queen) – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 841-814 Jehu – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 835-796 Joash/Jehoash – did what was **right** in the eyes of the Lord
- 814-798 Jehoahaz – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 798-782 Joash/Jehoash – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 796-767 Amaziah – did what was **right** in the eyes of the Lord
- 782-753 Jeroboam II – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 767-740 Uzziah/Azariah – did what was **right** in the eyes of the Lord
- 753-752 Zechariah – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 752 Shallum – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 752-742 Menahem – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 750-735 Jotham – did what was **right** in the eyes of the Lord
- 742-740 Pekahiah – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 740-732 Pekah – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 732-722 Hoshea – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
- 722 **Fall of Samaria**, capital of the northern kingdom, to the Assyrians

- 735-715 Ahaz – did what was **right** in the eyes of the Lord
715-687 Hezekiah – did what was **right** in the eyes of the Lord
687-642 Manasseh – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
642-640 Amon – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
640-609 Josiah – did what was **right** in the eyes of the Lord
628 ***Josiah's reforms***
609 Jehoahaz – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
609-598 Jehoiakim – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
605 ***First deportation to Babylon:*** Daniel and his three friends were included
598-597 Jehoiachin/Jeconiah – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
597 ***Jerusalem attacked:*** Nebuchadnezzar II takes more exiles to Babylon
597-586 Zedekiah – did what was **evil** in the eyes of the Lord
586 ***Fall of Jerusalem,*** capital of the southern kingdom, to the Babylonians

Summary of the Kings of Israel and Judah:

The northern kingdom of Israel had 19 kings. None did right in the eyes of the Lord.
The southern kingdom of Judah had 19 kings. Eight did right in the eyes of the Lord.

The Exile and the Return

(Ezra-Esther)

- 539 Fall of Babylon to Cyrus of Persia
538 First return of exiles to Jerusalem
536 Beginning of the Temple rebuilding in Jerusalem
516 Completion of the Temple rebuilding in Jerusalem
478 Queen Esther is in the palace of Xerxes
458 Second return of exiles to Jerusalem under Ezra
445 Third return of exiles to Jerusalem under Nehemiah

The Inter-testament Period

The Appearing of the Messiah

(Matthew-John)

- 37 BC Herod the Great begins his reign and rules until 4 BC
- 31 BC Augustus becomes Roman Emperor and rules until 14 AD
- 5 BC Jeshua (Jesus of Nazareth) is born
- 14 Tiberius becomes Roman Emperor and rules until 37 AD
- 18 Caiaphas becomes high priest in Jerusalem
- 26 Pontius Pilate is appointed Prefect of Judea
- 30 Crucifixion, Resurrection and Ascension of Yeshua

The Age of the Apostles

(Acts-Revelation)

- 30 Pentecost and the birth of the Church
- 35 Stephen martyred
- 35 Paul converted
- 37 Josephus is born. He died in 100
- 39 Herod Antipas dies
- 40 Romans discover navigational key to monsoons and begin trade with India
Strong, enduring tradition says the apostle Thomas brought the gospel to India
- 41 Claudius becomes Emperor
- 42 The apostle James is beheaded by Herod Agrippa
- 42/43 The church of the one new man—Jew and Gentile—is founded in Antioch
- 43 Rome invades Britain
- 44 Herod Agrippa dies – Acts 7
- 45 Paul and Barnabas set out from Antioch on their first missionary journey
- 45 The epistles of James and Paul’s to the Galatians are written
- 46-48 The famine in Palestine – Acts 11:28
- 49 The first Church council was convened in Jerusalem – Acts 15
- 65 Peter and Paul are executed
- 70 Titus Destroys Jerusalem
- 70 Messianic followers of Christ are increasingly excluded from the synagogues

100-199

- 150 Justin Martyr writes *First Apology*
- 180 Irenaeus writes *Against Heresies*
- 196 Tertullian begins writing

150 ANCIENT WELLS

200-299

215 Origen begins writing

230 Earliest known church buildings are built

250 Empire-wide persecution under Emperor Decius causes many to fall away

270 Anthony takes up solitude, paving the way for monasticism

300-399

312 Donatist Schism over treatment of apostates from the Great Persecution

313 The Edict of Milan

325 The First Council of Nicea

358 Basil the Great founds a monastery, a model for religious communities

367 Athanasius lists books of the New Testament

381 The first Council of Constantinople ratifies the Nicene Creed

386 Augustine converts to Christianity

390 Ambrose refuses Emperor Theodosius Communion

400-499

405 Jerome completes the Latin Vulgate translation of the Bible

432 Patrick's mission to Ireland leads to a flourishing Celtic church

451 The Council of Chalcedon

500-599

529 Justinian's Code is published, becoming the basis of canon law in the West

540 Benedict writes his monastic *Rule*

590 Gregory the Great, a monk, becomes pope and takes on civil power

597 Augustine's mission to England converts the pagan Angles

600-699

663 Synod of Whitby aligns the English church with Rome for the next 900 years

700-799

716 Boniface's mission to the Germans spreads the faith to northern Europe

732 Battle of Tours halts Muslim invasion, keeping Europe under Christian rule

800-899

800 Charlemagne crowned Holy Roman Emperor unifying Europe politically

900-999

910 Monastery at Cluny is founded energizing a monastic reform movement

988 Vladimir Adopts Christianity

1000-1099

1054 The East-West Schism

1093 Anselm named Archbishop of Canterbury and writes enduring theology

1095 Pope Urban II launches the First Crusade

1100-1199

1115 Bernard founds monastery at Clairvaux – “father of Western mysticism”

1150 Universities of Paris and Oxford are founded

1200-1299

1208 Francis of Assisi renounces wealth and later founds the Franciscan Order

1215 Innocent III calls the Fourth Lateran Council

1220 Dominic established Order of Preachers, the Dominicans

1272 Thomas Aquinas concludes his work on *Summa Theologiae*

1300-1399

1321 Dante’s *Divine Comedy* gives poetic expression to medieval concepts

1370 Catherine of Sienna begins to write letters, treasure of Western mysticism

1378 The Great Papal Schism

1380 John Wyclif supervises Bible translation, yielding the first English Bible

1400-1499

1453 Constantinople falls to the Turks, ending a millennium of Byzantine rule

1456 Gutenberg produces the first printed Bible in Mainz, Germany

1479 The Spanish Inquisition begins against baptized Jews and Moors

1500-1599

1517 Luther posts the 95 Theses

1518 Ulrich Zwingli becomes priest in Zurich and introduces Reformed theology

1521 The Diet of Worms

1525 The Anabaptist Movement Begins

1529 Colloquy of Marburg Luther and Zwingli had different views on Communion

1530 Augsburg Confession definitively expresses Lutheran beliefs

1534 The Act of Supremacy

1536 John Calvin published *Institutes of the Christian Religion*

1540 Ignatius Loyola receives approval for the Society of Jesus – the Jesuits

1545 The Council of Trent begins

1549 *Book of Common Prayer* (Church of England) is drafted by Thomas Cranmer

1559 John Knox returns to Scotland and calls for a bloodless Reformation

1598 Edict of Nantes ends the persecution of French Protestants (Huguenots)

1600-1699

- 1609 John Smyth baptizes himself and 40 others, starting the Baptist movement
- 1611 The *King James Bible* is published
- 1633 Galileo is forced to recant his belief that the earth revolves around the sun
- 1646 Westminster Confession is drafted, a statement of Presbyterian beliefs
- 1648 Peace of Westphalia ends Thirty Years' War, settling European religious wars
- 1652 George Fox founds the Society of Friends (Quakers)
- 1675 Jakob Philipp Spener launches the Pietistic movement
- 1678 John Bunyan, jailed Baptist preacher, writes *Pilgrim's Progress*
- 1678 *Pilgrim's Progress* – next to the Bible, the most popular English book ever

1700-1799

- 1707 Isaac Watts' Hymns and Spiritual Songs moves the church toward hymns
- 1732 The first Moravian missionaries launch the Protestant missionary movement
- 1735 George Whitefield is converted and begins open-air evangelism
- 1738 John & Charles Wesley, fathers of the Methodist movement, are converted
- 1740 The Great Awakening peaks
- 1789 The French Revolution leads to the secularization of France
- 1792 William Carey, a Baptist pastor in England, takes steps to go to India

1800-1899

- 1807 William Wilberforce's efforts lead to the abolition of the British slave trade
- 1816 Richard Allen becomes bishop of the African Methodist Episcopal church
- 1833 John Keble's sermon sparks the Oxford Movement in Church of England
- 1835 Charles Finney's Lectures on Revivals is published
- 1844 Søren Kierkegaard's Philosophical Fragments is published
- 1845 Phoebe Palmer's The Way to Holiness spurs the Holiness movement
- 1855 D. L. Moody is converted and becomes the greatest evangelist of his time
- 1864 *Syllabus of Errors* from Pope Pius IX rejects modern trends like socialism
- 1870 First Vatican Council declares infallibility when a pope speaks *ex cathedra*
- 1878 William and Catherine Booth found the Salvation Army
- 1886 Student Volunteer Movement begins, stirring 20,000 students to missions

1900-1999

- 1906 The Azusa Street Revival takes place under William Seymour's leadership
- 1910 The Edinburgh Missionary Conference is led by John R. Mott
- 1910 The modern ecumenical movement is birthed at the Edinburgh conference

- 1910 *The Fundamentals*, a twelve-paperback series, launches fundamentalism
- 1919 Karl Barth's *Commentary on Romans* ignites neo-orthodoxy
- 1931 C. S. Lewis, one of the 20th century's most influential thinkers, is converted
- 1934 Wycliffe Bible Translators is founded by Cameron Townsend
- 1940 First Christian television broadcasts are made
- 1941 Rudolf Bultmann calls for demythologization of the New Testament
- 1945 Dietrich Bonhoeffer publishes *Letters and Papers from Prison*
- 1948 The World Council of Churches is formally constituted
- 1949 The Los Angeles Crusade catapults Billy Graham into prominence
- 1954 United Methodists grant full ordination to women
- 1960 Episcopal rector Dennis Bennett's experience fuels the charismatic renewal
- 1962 The Second Vatican Council is called by Pope John XXIII
- 1963 Martin Luther King, Jr. leads the march on Washington

2000-2010

Main Sources:

A Lion Handbook: The History of Christianity

NIV Study Bible

ESV Study Bible

The Lost History of Christianity, by Philip Jenkins

Church History in Plain Language, by Bruce L. Shelley

A History of Christianity in Asia: Volume 1, by Samuel Hugh Moffett

Christian History, Issue 28 (Vol. IX, No. 4)

Unpublished paper by Jayson Knox

PART XIII: READINGS FROM JUDEO-
CHRISTIAN HISTORY

Article 69: Baptism in 3rd Century Rome

In about A. D. 215, Hippolytus described in detail how converts in Rome were baptized. Scholar Michael Walsh summarizes Hippolytus' account of the ceremony:⁴⁶

To understand the impact of baptism it is important to remember the length of the preparation and the atmosphere of the occasion. It had been preceded by at least three years of instruction, with the promise of more secrets to come at the moment of baptism. There was, therefore, a heightened sense of anticipation. Immediately before the ceremony came a fast, a long period of prayer, an all-night vigil in a darkened building.

Then, in the dim light of wavering torches, the Devil was solemnly abjured to flee in a series of exorcisms. The candidate entered the baptistery.

First he or she turned toward the west to renounce Satan, then toward the east to confess Christ. There were repeated anointings with oil, the symbol of strength. Once at least the naked candidate was anointed from head to toe. Then, oiled as if for bathing, the candidate entered the font, climbing in...or stepping down until knee-deep while a deacon poured water over the head, or pressed the candidate's head down into the pool.

There was another anointing perhaps—rituals differed—before the candidate dressed in new clothes. All this took place in the half-light, to the sound of hymns, in a state of high exaltation. Then came confirmation—another anointing—and the new Christian moved out of the torchlight into the dawn of a brightly lit church to receive his or her first Eucharist.

Questions during baptism

What questions were asked of candidates for baptism? Hippolytus tells us in detail:

And when he who is being baptized goes down into the water, he who baptizes him, putting his hand on him, shall say thus: "Dost thou believe in God, the Father Almighty?"

And he who is being baptized shall say: "I believe."

Then holding his hand placed on his head, he shall baptize him once.

And then he shall say: "Dost thou believe in Christ Jesus, the Son of God, who was born by the Holy Ghost of the Virgin Mary, and was crucified under Pontius Pilate, and was dead and buried, and rose again the third day, alive from the dead and ascended into heaven, and sat at the right hand of the Father, and will come to judge the quick and the dead?"

And when he says: "I believe," he is baptized again.

And again he shall say: "Dost thou believe in the Holy Ghost; in the holy church, and the resurrection of the flesh?"

He who is being baptized shall say accordingly: "I believe," and so he is baptized a third time.

Anointings afterward

And afterward, when he has come up [out of the water], he is anointed by the presbyter with the oil of thanksgiving, the presbyter saying: "I anoint thee with holy oil in the name of Jesus Christ."

⁴⁶*Christian History*, Issue 37, [Vol. XII, No. 1], p. 41.

And so each one, after drying himself, is immediately clothed, and then is brought into church.

Then the bishop, laying his hand upon them, shall pray, saying:

"O Lord God, who hast made them worthy to obtain remission of sins through the laver of regeneration of the Holy Spirit, send into them thy grace, that they may serve thee according to thy will; for thine is the glory, to the Father and the Son, with the Holy Spirit in the holy Church, both now and world without end. Amen."

Then, pouring the oil of thanksgiving from his hand and putting it on his forehead, he shall say: "I anoint thee with holy oil in the Lord, the Father Almighty and Christ Jesus and the Holy Ghost."

And signing them on the forehead he shall say: "The Lord be with thee"; and he who is signed shall say: "and with thy spirit."

And so he shall do to each one.

Article 70: A Cry to the Church

2006

We are a gathering of followers of Jesus. We come from many nations, from many Church traditions and from the Messianic Jewish community, both in Israel and in the Diaspora. We met in Jerusalem, September 12-14, 2006 under the auspices of the Toward Jerusalem Council II Initiative (TJCII) and the Olive Tree Fellowship of Jerusalem. The purpose of our gathering was to pray together and, through repentance, to seek reconciliation with the Lord and with each other.

From this gathering we issue the following cry to the Church [sic.] worldwide in the name of TJCII:

1 – Please hear our cry for recognition of and fellowship with our Messianic Jewish brethren. As Jews they have come to faith in Jesus as Lord, Saviour and the Messiah and seek to live out this faith in communities whose worship, teaching and lifestyle are distinctively Jewish.

2 – Please hear our cry that one day there will be a Second Council of Jerusalem at which the leadership of the Church from the Nations (*"Ecclesia ex Gentibus"*) will recognize and enter into full communion with the resurrected Church from the Circumcision (*"Ecclesia ex Judaeis"*) annulling all the decrees and legislation against the Jewish expression of the Church.

3 – Please hear our cry that for such a Council to take place, all the Churches from the nations must be led by the Holy Spirit into a process of corporate repentance for:

- i. all forms of anti-Semitism;
- ii. all enforced assimilation of Jewish believers into the church communities of the *nations, into their cultures and into their ways of thought*;
- iii. all forms of replacement teaching that God has rejected the Jewish people and that the Church has taken the place of Israel;
- iv. all deeds that contributed to the near extinction of Jewish belief in Jesus.

4 – Please hear our cry for the restoration of Jerusalem to the fullness of its divine purpose and potential:

- i. as a prophetic city central to God's redemptive purpose;
- ii. as a city of authority in the worldwide Body of Christ;
- iii. as a city of reconciliation that will be a blessing to all the nations.

5 – Please hear our cry to all the Churches to rediscover their Jewish roots.

6 – Please hear our cry for this reconciliation in Christ between Jewish believers and believers from other ethnic backgrounds and church traditions. (see Ephesians 2:14-15). This will be a fulfillment of the prayer of Jesus in John 17:21 and will lead to a new dynamic for unity among the Churches and believers from the nations.

7 – Please hear our cry that this work of reconciliation will usher in great progress in spreading the Gospel and in the restoration of justice among the divided peoples of the world. (see Romans 11:11-15).

We pray that the response to our cry may contribute significantly to this already growing movement of reconciliation, both corporately and personally, between the disciples of Jesus, the Jewish disciples and the Christian disciples from the nations.

PART XIV: RESTORE THE ANCIENT
ANOINTINGS

Article 71: Introduction

Ancient Wells assumes that God has never left himself without significant witnesses. The knowledge of God – true spiritual maturity – has never perished from the earth. *Restore the Ancient Anointings* seeks to trace in some meaningful and helpful way the legacy of those who have carried the kind of relationship with God that has allowed him to place his anointing upon their lives.

As we begin this journey, we quickly come upon scores upon scores – yea, hundreds upon hundreds – of examples that could be used. Obviously, this could quickly exceed the present capacity of *Ancient Wells*. Whom will we choose? Here comes a second intent of *Restore the Ancient Anointings*: 1) to capture and communicate the anointing from God that has rested upon individuals down through Judean-Christian history, and 2) to serve as one way to become familiar with that history. Hence, in deciding who should be included, we want to, as much as possible, focus on the men and women who also serve to help trace the outlines of this overall history.

BIBLICAL PERSONALITIES:

The great value of Biblical personalities is that we can include in the readings God's evaluation of the person. God will describe and affirm the anointing. "Enoch walked with God," says God. Again, we are seeking to capture, intellectually but also intuitively, a description, a picture, an image of the anointing. And, in choosing Biblical characters, we want to concentrate on those who serve to help trace the overall flow of the history.

POST-BIBLICAL PERSONALITIES:

As important as Biblical personalities are, those who come after them are also crucially important. They show that God's anointing activity did not stop when the canon of Scripture was completed. Here, of course, we are dependent upon other ways to display and image the anointing other than direct evaluation from Holy Scripture. This leads us, as much as possible, to quote the things the person actually wrote or is reported as having said. A good example is Patrick of Ireland. We know only the outline of his life, with significant features being uncertain, and nothing that he directly wrote. But the legacy of his Breastplate is so strong that it captures the anointing that rested upon him. Again, who will we choose to include? Answer: as much as possible, those who play a major role in defining the flow of history of which they are a part, and those for whom we have their own words, or words credibly assigned to them, that capture and transfer the anointing.

THE USE OF THE ARTICLES:

Ancient Wells is a book of 1) worship, 2) theology and 3) formation. One of its foundational convictions is that these things belong together. So the articles in *Ancient Wells*, including those in *Restore the Ancient Anointings*, are designed to be used in worship and prayer times. They can be so used in many different ways according to the discretion of the leader, but they need to be able to fit into liturgical forms. As they are used in worship and prayer, they contribute to the

development of the theology of those who are using them thus. But they are also for the use of formation. They are designed with both in mind.

THE LIVES OF THE SAINTS:⁴⁷

When we read the lives of the saints, we are struck by a certain large leisure which went hand in hand with remarkable effectiveness. They were never hurried; they did comparatively few things, and these not necessarily striking or important; and they troubled very little about their influence. Yet they always seemed to hit the mark; their simplest actions had a distinction, an exquisiteness that suggest the artist. The reason is not so far to seek. Their sainthood lay in their habit of referring the smallest actions to God. They lived in God; they acted from a pure motive of love towards God. They were free from self-regard as from slavery to the good opinion of others. God saw and God rewarded: what else did they need? They possessed God and possessed themselves in God. Hence the inalienable dignity of the meek, quiet figures that seem to produce such marvelous effects with such humble materials.

Here are additional insights from Leanne Payne:⁴⁸

Saints of all ages have made it their business to be present to God. Out of this has sprung their truest vocation – to blaze spiritual trails. Every generation of Christians must courageously face dark wildernesses, created by the sins and blindnesses of generations past, through which a path must be hewn. These always stand as formidable roadblocks to the next generation of Christians. Saints who practice the Presence become courageous pathfinders. No matter how much they suffer, they are to be accounted doubly blessed – they have discovered what they were born to do.

⁴⁷ From *Creative Prayer* by Brigid Herman. Copyright 1998 by Paraclete Press. Quoted in *The Divine Hours: Prayers for Autumn and Wintertime*, Image Books, Doubleday, New York, London, Toronto, Sydney, Auckland, 2000, p. 135-136.

⁴⁸ Adapted from *The Healing Presence*, by Leanne Payne, page 34.

Article 72: Adam and Eve

In the Beginning

Adam and Eve, created by God in his image, carried the original human anointing. By their disobedience, they also catapulted humanity into our lostness. Understanding our initial parents is essential to understanding human history, including the history of Israel and the Church, current events, and ourselves. Each man and woman carries both the glory of the image of God and the ruin resulting from our choice to separate from him.

Genesis 1:1, 26 – In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.... God said, "Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures...."

Genesis 1:27-28 – So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. God blessed them and said to them, "Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it...."

Genesis 1:31 – God saw all that he had made, and it was very good....

Genesis 2:15-17 – The LORD God took the man and put him in the Garden of Eden to work it and take care of it. And the LORD God commanded the man, "You are free to eat from any tree in the garden; but you must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for when you eat of it you will surely die."

Genesis 2:18 – The LORD God said, "It is not good for the man to be alone. I will make a helper suitable for him."

Genesis 2:21-24 – So the LORD God caused the man to fall into a deep sleep; and while he was sleeping, he took one of the man's ribs and closed up the place with flesh. Then the LORD God made a woman from the rib he had taken out of the man, and he brought her to the man. The man said, "This is now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh; she shall be called woman, for she was taken out of man." For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and they will become one flesh

Genesis 2:25 – The man and his wife were both naked, and they felt no shame.

Psalms 8:3-6, 9 – When I consider your heavens, the work of your fingers, the moon and the stars, which you have set in place, what is man that you are mindful of him, the son of man that you care for him? You made him a little lower than the heavenly beings and crowned him with glory and honor. You made him ruler over the works of your hands; you put everything under his feet.... O LORD...how majestic is your name in all the earth!

Genesis 3:1-3 – Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the LORD God had made. He said to the woman, "Did God really say, 'You must not eat from any tree in the garden?'" The woman said to the serpent, "We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, but God did say, 'You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.'"

Genesis 3:4-7 – "You will not surely die," the serpent said to the woman. "For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her

husband, who was with her, and he ate it. Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they realized they were naked; so they sewed fig leaves together and made coverings for themselves.

Genesis 3:8-13 – Then the man and his wife heard the sound of the LORD God as he was walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and they hid from the LORD God among the trees of the garden. But the LORD God called to the man, "Where are you?" He answered, "I heard you in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid." And he said, "Who told you that you were naked?" Have you eaten from the tree that I commanded you not to eat from?" The man said, "The woman you put here with me – she gave me some fruit from the tree, and I ate it." Then the LORD God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?" The woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate."

Genesis 3:14-15 – So the LORD God said to the serpent, "Because you have done this, Cursed are you above all the livestock and all the wild animals!..."

Genesis 3:16 – To the woman he said, "I will greatly increase your pains in childbearing; with pain you will give birth to children. Your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you."

Genesis 3:17, 19 – To Adam he said, "Because you listened to your wife and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, 'You must not eat of it,' Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat of it all the days of your life.... By the sweat of your brow you will eat your food until you return to the ground...for dust you are and to dust you will return."

Romans 1:21-22, 24 – For although they knew God, they neither glorified him as God nor gave thanks to him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were darkened. Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools.... God gave them over in the sinful desires of their hearts....

1 Corinthians 15:20-22 – But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who have fallen asleep. For since death came through a man, the resurrection of the dead comes also through a man. For as in Adam all die, so in Christ all will be made alive.

Article 73: Enoch

Ancient Past

Although the consequences of Adam and Eve's disobedience were devastating and pervasive for the human race, the Scriptures assure us that the knowledge of God did not vanish from the earth. A godly line was preserved. Enoch is a beautiful representative. So is his descendent Noah.

Genesis 4:26-5:2 – ...At that time men began to call on the name of the LORD. This is the written account of Adam's line. When God created man, he made him in the likeness of God. He created them male and female and blessed them. And when they were created, he called them "man."

Genesis 5:3, 6, 9, 12, 15, 18 – When Adam had lived 130 years, he had a son in his own likeness, in his own image; and he named him Seth...Seth became the father of Enosh.... Enosh became the father of Kenan.... Kenan became the father of Mahalalel.... Mahalalel became the father of Jared.... Jared...became the father of Enoch.

Genesis 5:21-22 – When Enoch had lived 65 years, he became the father of Methuselah. And after he became the father of Methuselah, Enoch walked with God 300 years and had other sons and daughters.

Genesis 5:23-24 – Altogether, Enoch lived 365 years. Enoch walked with God; then he was no more, because God took him away.

Hebrews 11:5-6 – By faith Enoch was taken from this life, so that he did not experience death; he could not be found, because God had taken him away. For before he was taken, he was commended as one who pleased God. And without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him.

Jude 1, 3-4, 14-15 – Jude, a servant of Jesus Christ and a brother of James, to those who have been called, who are loved by God the Father and kept by Jesus Christ;...I felt I had to write and urge you to contend for the faith that was once for all entrusted to the saints. For certain men whose condemnation was written about long ago have secretly slipped in among you. They are godless men...Enoch, the seventh from Adam, prophesied about these men: "See, the Lord is coming with thousands upon thousands of his holy ones to judge everyone, and to convict all the ungodly..."

Article 74: Noah

Ancient Past

Genesis 5:21, 25, 28-29, 32 – ...Enoch became the father of Methuselah.... Methuselah became the father of Lamech.... Lamech had a son. He named him Noah.... [Noah] became the father of Shem, Ham and Japheth.

Genesis 6:5-8 – The LORD saw how great man’s wickedness on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time. The LORD was grieved that he had made man on the earth, and his heart was filled with pain. So the LORD said, “I will wipe mankind, whom I have created, from the face of the earth—men and animals, and creatures that move along the ground, and birds of the air—for I am grieved that I have made them.” But Noah found favor in the eyes of the LORD.

Genesis 6:9, 13-15, 22 – This is the account of Noah. Noah was a righteous man, blameless among the people of his time, and he walked with God.... So God said to Noah, “.... make yourself an ark...This is how you are to build it....” Noah did everything just as God commanded him.

Genesis 7:1-5 – The LORD then said to Noah, “Go into the ark, you and your whole family, because I have found you righteous in this generation. Take with you seven of every kind of clean animal...and two of every kind of unclean animal...and also seven of every kind of bird... Seven days from now I will send rain on the earth for forty days and forty nights, and I will wipe from the face of the earth every living creature I have made.” And Noah did all that the LORD commanded him.

Genesis 7:12, 17-21 – And rain fell on the earth forty days and forty nights.... as the waters increased they lifted the ark high above the earth.... The waters rose and covered the mountains to a depth of more than twenty feet. Every living thing that moved on the earth perished—birds, livestock, wild animals, all the creatures that swarm over the earth, and all mankind.

Genesis 8:1-2, 4-5 – But God remembered Noah and all the wild animals and the livestock that were with him in the ark, and he sent a wind over the earth, and the waters receded. Now...the rain had stopped falling from the sky.... and on the seventeenth day of the seventh month the ark came to rest on the mountains of Ararat. The waters continued to recede until the tenth month, and on the first day of the tenth month the tops of the mountains became visible.

Genesis 8:14-17 – By the twenty-seventh day of the second month the earth was completely dry. Then God said to Noah, “Come out of the ark, you and your wife and your sons and their wives. Bring out every kind of living creature that is with you—the birds, the animals, and all the creatures that move along the ground—so they can multiply on the earth...and increase in number...”

Genesis 8:20-21 – Then Noah built an altar to the LORD and...sacrificed burnt offerings on it. The LORD smelled the pleasing aroma and said in his heart: “Never again will I curse the ground because of man, even though every inclination of his heart is evil from childhood....”

Genesis 9:1-2 – Then God blessed Noah and his sons... “Be fruitful and increase in number and fill the earth. The fear and dread of you will fall upon all the beasts of the earth and all the birds

of the air, upon every creature that moves along the ground, and upon all the fish of the sea; they are given into your hands.”

Genesis 9:8-13 – ...God said to Noah and to his sons with him: “I now establish my covenant with you and with your descendants after you and with every living creature that was with you... Never again...will there be a flood to destroy the earth....This is the sign of the covenant...I have set my rainbow in the clouds...”

Ezekiel 14:13-14 – “Son of man, if a country sins against me by being unfaithful and I stretch out my hand against it to cut off its food supply and send famine upon it and kill its men and their animals, even if these three men – Noah, Daniel and Job – were in it, they could save only themselves by their righteousness,” declares the Sovereign LORD.

Matthew 24:37-39 – “As it was in the days of Noah, so it will be at the coming of the Son of Man. For in the days before the flood, people were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, up to the day Noah entered the ark; and they knew nothing about what would happen until the flood came and took them all away. That is how it will be at the coming of the Son of Man.”

Hebrews 11:7 – By faith Noah, when warned about things not yet seen, in holy fear built an ark to save his family. By his faith he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness that comes by faith.

2 Peter 2:4-5, 9 – For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but sent them to hell, putting them into gloomy dungeons to be held for judgment; if he did not spare the ancient world when he brought the flood on its ungodly people, but protected Noah, a preacher of righteousness, and seven others...then the Lord knows how to rescue godly men from trials and to hold the unrighteous for the day of judgment..

Genesis 10:1; 11:10, 12, 14, 16, 18, 20, 22, 24, 26– This is the account of Shem, Ham and Japheth, Noah’s sons...Shem...became the father of Arphaxad....Arphaxad became the father of Shelah....[Shelah] became the father of Eber....[Eber] became the father of Peleg....[Peleg] became the father of Reu....[Reu] became the father of Serug....[Serug] became the father of Nahor.... [Nahor] became the father of Terah.... [Terah] became the father of Abram....

Article 75: Abraham

c. 2100 BC

Abraham was born in Ur of the Chaldeans, probably located in today's southern Iraq. At age 75, in response to the call of God, he left country, home and family and journeyed to Canaan, the land God promised to him and his descendants. There, through his son Isaac and grandson Jacob (Israel), he became the father of the people of Israel, whom God chose to be his channel of blessing to all nations. Abraham, spiritual father of both Jew and Christian, was called the friend of God (*2 Chronicles 20:7*).

* * * * *

Genesis 12:1-3 – The LORD had said to Abram, “Leave your country, your people and your father’s household and go to the land I will show you. I will make you into a great nation and I will bless you; I will make your name great, and you will be a blessing. I will bless those who bless you, and whoever curses you I will curse; and all peoples on earth will be blessed through you.”

Genesis 12:4-7 – So Abram left, as the LORD had told him.... Abram was seventy-five years old when he set out from Haran. He took his wife Sarai, his nephew Lot, all the possessions they had accumulated..., and they set out for the land of Canaan, and they arrived there.... The LORD appeared to Abram and said, “To your offspring I will give this land.” So he built an altar there to the LORD, who had appeared to him.

Genesis 15:13-16 – Then the LORD said to him, “... your descendants will be strangers in a country not their own, and they will be enslaved and mistreated four hundred years. But I will punish the nation they serve as slaves, and afterward they will come out with great possessions. You, however, will go to your fathers in peace and be buried at a good old age. In the fourth generation your descendants will come back here....”

Genesis 15:18 – The LORD made a covenant with Abram... “To your descendents I give this land, from the river of Egypt to the great river, the Euphrates—”

Genesis 17:1-5 – When Abram was ninety-nine years old, the LORD ...said, “I am God Almighty; walk before me and be blameless. I will confirm my covenant between me and you and will greatly increase your numbers.... No longer will you be called Abram; your name will be Abraham, for I have made you a father of many nations.”

Genesis 17:15-16 – God also said to Abraham, “As for Sarai your wife, you are no longer to call her Sarai; her name will be Sarah. I will bless her and will surely give you a son by her... she will be the mother of nations; kings of peoples will come from her.”

Genesis 21:1-5 – Now the LORD...did for Sarah what he had promised. Sarah became pregnant and bore a son to Abraham in his old age, at the very time God had promised him. Abraham gave the name Isaac to the son Sarah bore him. When his son Isaac was eight days old, Abraham circumcised him, as God commanded him. Abraham was a hundred years old when his son Isaac was born to him.

Genesis 22:1-2 – Some time later God tested Abraham. He said to him, “Abraham...Take your son, your only son, Isaac, whom you love, and go to the region of Moriah. Sacrifice him there as a burnt offering...”

Genesis 22:6-8 – Abraham took the wood for the burnt offering and placed it on his son Isaac, and he himself carried the fire and the knife.... Isaac...said to his father..., "... The fire and wood are here...but where is the lamb for the burnt offering?" Abraham answered, "God himself will provide the lamb..."

Genesis 22:9-12 – When they reached the place...Abraham built an altar...arranged the wood... bound his son...laid him on the altar...took the knife to slay his son. But the angel of the LORD called out..., "Abraham! Abraham! ... Do not lay a hand on the boy...Now I know that you fear God, because you have not withheld from me your son, your only son."

Genesis 22:13 – Abraham looked up and there in a thicket he saw a ram caught by its horns. He went over and took the ram and sacrificed it as a burnt offering instead of his son.

Romans 4:18-22 – Against all hope, Abraham in hope believed and so became the father of many nations.... He faced the fact that his body was as good as dead—since he was about a hundred years old—and that Sarah's womb was also dead, Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised. This is why "it was credited to him as righteousness."

Hebrews 11:8-10 – By faith Abraham, when called to go to a place he would later receive as his inheritance, obeyed and went, even though he did not know where he was going. By faith he made his home in the promised land like a stranger in a foreign country; he lived in tents, as did Isaac and Jacob, who were heirs with him of the same promise. For he was looking forward to the city with foundations, whose architect and builder is God.

Hebrews 11:17-19 – By faith Abraham, when God tested him, offered Isaac as a sacrifice. He who had received the promises was about to sacrifice his...only son, even though God had said to him, "It is through Isaac that your offspring will be reckoned." Abraham reasoned that God could raise the dead...

Romans 4:16 – ...The promise comes by faith, so that it may be by grace and...guaranteed to all Abraham's offspring—not only to those who are of the law but also to those who are of the faith of Abraham. He is the father of us all.

Article 76: Isaac

c. 2000 BC

Isaac was the son of Abraham through whom God's covenant with the people of Israel passed. Some of the most significant spiritual lessons from his life come from the circumstances of his birth, especially in contrast to that of his older half-brother Ishmael.

The Story

Genesis 13:14, 16 – The LORD said to Abram... "I will make your offspring like the dust of the earth, so that if anyone could count the dust, then your offspring could be counted."

Genesis 15:3-4 – And Abram said, "You have given me no children; so a servant in my household will be my heir."...the word of the LORD came to him: "This man will not be your heir, but a son coming from your own body will be your heir."

Genesis 16:1-2 – Now Sarai, Abram's wife, had borne him no children. But she had an Egyptian maidservant named Hagar; so she said to Abram, "The LORD has kept me from having children. Go, sleep with my maidservant; perhaps I can build a family through her." Abram agreed to what Sarai said.

Genesis 16:3-6 – So after Abram had been living in Canaan ten years, Sarai his wife took her Egyptian maidservant Hagar and gave her to her husband to be his wife. He slept with Hagar, and she conceived. When she knew she was pregnant, she began to despise her mistress. Then Sarai said to Abram, "You are responsible for the wrong I am suffering..." "Your servant is in your hands," Abram said. "Do with her whatever you think best." Then Sarai mistreated Hagar; so she fled from her.

Genesis 16:7, 11-12, 15-16 – The angel of the LORD found Hagar near a spring in the desert.... The angel of the LORD also said to her: "You are now with child and you will have a son. You shall name him Ishmael, for the LORD has heard your misery. He will be a wild donkey of a man; his hand will be against everyone and everyone's hand against him, and he will live in hostility toward all his brothers.".... So Hagar bore Abram a son, and Abram gave the name Ishmael to the son she had borne. Abram was eighty-six years old when Hagar bore him Ishmael.

Genesis 17:3, 5, 15-16 – ...God said to him, "... No longer will you be called Abram; your name will be Abraham, for I have made you a father of many nations.... As for Sarai your wife, you are no longer to call her Sarai; her name will be Sarah. I will bless her and will surely give you a son by her..."

Genesis 17:17-18 – Abraham fell facedown; he laughed and said to himself, "Will a son be born to a man a hundred years old? Will Sarah bear a child at the age of ninety?" And Abraham said to God, "If only Ishmael might live under your blessing!"

Genesis 17:19 – Then God said, "...your wife Sarah will bear you a son, and you will call him Isaac. I will establish my covenant with him as an everlasting covenant for his descendants after him."

Genesis 17:20-22 – "And as for Ishmael, I have heard you: I will surely bless him; I will make him fruitful and will greatly increase his numbers.... But my covenant I will establish with Isaac,

whom Sarah will bear to you by this time next year." When he had finished speaking with Abraham, God went up from him.

Genesis 21:1-5 – Now the LORD was gracious to Sarah as he had said, and the LORD did for Sarah what he had promised. Sarah became pregnant and bore a son to Abraham in his old age, at the very time God had promised him. Abraham gave the name Isaac to the son Sarah bore him. When his son Isaac was eight days old, Abraham circumcised him, as God commanded him. Abraham was a hundred years old when his son Isaac was born to him.

Exodus 3:4-6 – ...God called to him from within the bush, "Moses! Moses!" And Moses said, "Here I am."...God said, "Take off your sandals, for the place where you are standing is holy ground." Then he said, "I am the God of your father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac..."

Hebrews 11:11-12 – By faith Abraham, even though he was past age—and Sarah herself was barren—was enabled to become a father because he considered him faithful who had made the promise. And so from this one man, and he as good as dead, came descendants as numerous as the stars in the sky and as countless as the sand on the seashore.

The Contrasts

The birth of Isaac:

- * was God's way
- * was supernatural
- * took place by means of the Spirit
- * could not be explained rationally
- * God was in control
- * was the fruit of much patience
- * glorified God
- * resulted in peace
- * gave us a father in the faith

The birth of Ishmael:

- * was man's way
- * was natural
- * took place by means of the flesh
- * could be explained rationally
- * Abraham and Sarah were in control
- * was an act of impatience
- * bypassed God
- * resulted in conflict
- * left no Godly legacy

A word has come to us with respect to the work to which God has called us in the Eifel region of Germany: This work is to be an Isaac. Do not give birth to an Ishmael.

Article 77: The Prophet Elijah

9th Century B.C.

The ministry of the prophet is crucial to any work of God. Jesus warned us not to be deceived by counterfeits. Elijah represents the prophets as Moses represents the law. Although a channel for astonishing manifestations of God's presence, Elijah's first concern was not miraculous acts or foretelling the future. Biblical prophets were called to a message – primarily proclaiming God's holiness and calling his people to repentance. God is a God of incarnation; He incarnates his message into the lives of his messengers. Of Elijah's early years we know only that he came from Tishbe in Gilead. Apparently formed by God in secret, he called Israel to repentance and return during a time of pervasive evil and apostasy. John the Baptist reminded people of Elijah. So did Jesus.

1 Kings 16:29-33 – In the thirty-eighth year of Asa king of Judah, Ahab son of Omri became king in Israel, and he reigned in Samaria over Israel twenty-two years. Ahab...did more evil in the eyes of the LORD than any of those before him. He...considered it trivial to commit the sins of Jeroboam son of Nebat...and began to serve Baal and worship him. He set up an altar for Baal in the temple of Baal that he built in Samaria. Ahab also made an Asherah pole and did more to provoke the LORD, the God of Israel, to anger than did all the kings of Israel before him.

1 Kings 17:1 – Now Elijah the Tishbite, from Tishbe in Gilead, said to Ahab, "As the LORD, the God of Israel, lives, whom I serve, there will be neither dew nor rain in the next few years except at my word."

1 Kings 17:2-6 – Then the word of the LORD came to Elijah: "Leave here, turn eastward and hide in the Kerith Ravine, east of the Jordan. You will drink from the brook, and I have ordered the ravens to feed you there." So he did what the LORD had told him... The ravens brought him bread and meat in the morning and bread and meat in the evening, and he drank from the brook.

1 Kings 17:7 – Some time later the brook dried up because there had been no rain...

1 Kings 17:8-12 – Then the word of the LORD came to him: "Go at once to Zarephath of Sidon and stay there. I have commanded a widow in that place to supply you with food." So he went to Zarephath... a widow was there gathering sticks. He called to her and asked, "Would you bring me a little water in a jar so I may have a drink... And bring me, please, a piece of bread..."...she replied, "I don't have any bread—only a handful of flour in a jar and a little oil in a jug. I am gathering a few sticks to take home and make a meal for myself and my son, that we may eat it—and die."

1 Kings 17:13-16 – Elijah said to her, "... Go home and do as you have said. But first make a small cake of bread for me from what you have and bring it to me, and then make something for yourself and your son. For this is what the LORD, the God of Israel, says: 'The jar of flour will not be used up and the jug of oil will not run dry until the day the LORD gives rain on the land.'" She...did as Elijah had told her. So there was food every day for Elijah and for the woman and her family. For the jar of flour was not used up and the jug of oil did not run dry, in keeping with the word of the LORD...

1 Kings 18:1-2 – After a long time, in the third year, the word of the LORD came to Elijah: "Go and present yourself to Ahab, and I will send rain on the land." So Elijah went to present himself to Ahab...

1 Kings 18:16-19 – ...Ahab went to meet Elijah. When he saw Elijah, he said to him, “Is that you, you troubler of Israel?” “I have not made trouble for Israel,” Elijah replied. “But you and your father’s family have. You have abandoned the LORD’S commands and have followed the Baals. Now summon the people from all over Israel to meet me on Mount Carmel. And bring the four hundred and fifty prophets of Baal and the four hundred prophets of Asherath, who eat at Jezebel’s table.”

1 Kings 18:21 – Elijah went before the people and said, “How long will you waver between two opinions? If the LORD is God, follow him; but if Baal is God, follow him.” But the people said nothing.

1 Kings 18:25-26 – Elijah said to the prophets of Baal, “Choose one of the bulls and prepare it first, since there are so many of you. Call on the name of your god, but do not light the fire.” So they took the bull given them and prepared it. Then they called on the name of Baal from morning till noon. “O Baal, answer us!” they shouted. But there was no response; no one answered. And they danced around the altar they had made.

1 Kings 18:36-39 – ...Elijah stepped forward and prayed: “O LORD, God of Abraham, Isaac and Israel, let it be known today that you are God in Israel and that I am your servant and have done all these things at your command. Answer me, O LORD, answer me, so these people will know that you, O LORD, are God, and that you are turning their hearts back again.” Then the fire of the LORD fell and burned up the sacrifice, the wood, the stones and the soil, and also licked up the water in the trench. When all the people saw this, they fell prostrate and cried, “The LORD — he is God! The LORD —he is God!”

1 Kings 18:42-46 – ...Elijah climbed to the top of Carmel, bent down to the ground and put his face between his knees. “Go and look toward the sea,” he told his servant. And he went up and looked. “There is nothing there,” he said. Seven times Elijah said, “Go back.” The seventh time the servant reported, “A cloud as small as a man’s hand is rising from the sea.”... the sky grew black with clouds, the wind rose, a heavy rain came.... The power of the LORD came upon Elijah....

Malachi 4:5-6 – “...I will send...the prophet Elijah before that great and dreadful day of the LORD comes. He will turn the hearts of the fathers to their children, and the hearts of the children to their fathers; or else I will come and strike the land with a curse.”

Matthew 16:13-14 – When Jesus came to the region of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, “Who do people say the Son of Man is?” They replied, “Some say...Elijah...”

Matthew 17:1-3 – ...Jesus took with him Peter, James and John.... There he was transfigured before them.... Just then there appeared before them Moses and Elijah....

Matthew 17:11-13 – Jesus replied, “... Elijah has already come and they did not recognize him, but have done to him everything they wished...” Then the disciples understood that he was talking to them about John the Baptist.

James 5:17 – Elijah was a man just like us....

Article 78: Elijah: Principles from the Life and Ministry of a Prophet

1 – **God often calls forth anointings, historic in their effect, to counteract deep spiritual darkness.** God raised up Elijah during a time of pervasive evil and apostasy among his people. – *1 Kings 16:29-33*

2 – Elijah appears in Scripture as it were “from nowhere” – 1 Kings 17:1 is the first time we meet him. **Apparently, like prophets before and after him, he was formed by God in secret.** – *1 Kings 17:1*

3 – **God entrusted Elijah with far-reaching spiritual authority.** He shows the influence one life can carry when God’s hand is upon him or her.

4 – Spiritual authority, as seen in the prophet, can be contrasted to governmental or organizational authority, as seen in the king or an organizational leader. A king’s authority rests in externals – position, social standing, financial resources, army, etc. **A prophet’s authority comes from God’s hand upon him or her, validated by a godly life.**

5 – **Governmental authority is not inherently evil.** God raises up rulers. Governmental and spiritual authority can reside in the same person. But when rulers and leaders grow independent of God, arrogant, ambitious and evil, God raises up others carrying spiritual authority to counteract them.

6 – Look for God to raise up many with the anointings of both king (ruler) and prophet. Moses was an example. So was David. So is Jesus.

Jesus knew that the Father had put all things under his power, and that he had come from God and was returning to God; so he got up from the meal, took off his outer clothing, and wrapped a towel around his waist... poured water into a basin and began to wash his disciples’ feet.... – John 13:3-5

7 – God called Elijah to catalyze spiritual renewal among his people. He gave him none of the outward trappings we might think such a call requires – organization, money, publicity, etc. **All Elijah had was God.**

8 – **God led Elijah immediately into a place of vulnerability and dependence.** Among God’s prophets, there is no room for arrogance, self-reliance, or triumphalism. – *1 Kings 17:2-6*

9 – **God allowed Elijah to be tested:** Would he use his God-given authority for his personal benefit? – *1 Kings 17:7*

10 – **God continued to form Elijah.** Like so many of God’s servants, he had to rely on God daily for his most basic needs. – *1 Kings 17:8-16*

11 – **Elijah used his authority only as and when he was instructed to do so by God.** The anointing was fully submitted to him. – *1 Kings 18:1*

12 – In times of spiritual decadence in Israel, the prophet carried greater authority than the king. – *1 Kings 18:7-8, 16, 19-20*

13 – Elijah used his prophetic calling and anointing to call God’s people to repentance and return. – *1 Kings 18:21*

14 – As long as Elijah kept his eyes on God, he ministered with amazing boldness. – *1 Kings 18:22-35*

15 – **In calling on God, Elijah’s attitude was very different to that of the prophets of Baal.** Baal’s prophets were loud, dramatic, full of self-effort and showmanship. Elijah was quiet and trusting. – *1 Kings 18:36-39*

16 – **Actualizing God’s full victory was costly for Elijah.** It called on him to set aside human pleasures and seek God in costly abandon. – *1 Kings 18:41-46*

17 – **For Elijah, victory was followed by spiritual counterattack** – a familiar pattern in Christian ministry. – *1 Kings 19:1-2*

18 – **Once Elijah took his eyes off the Lord, and began to look at Jezebel, fear took over.** This stands in stark contrast to the courage he had known when his eyes were on God alone. – *1 Kings 19:3*

19 – **Spiritually, emotionally and physically exhausted, Elijah fell into self-pity and defeat.** God’s anointed servants are not immune to sin, error and failure. Caring appropriately for ourselves and others, especially after great victories, is godly wisdom. – *1 Kings 19:4-10*

20 – **Elijah was renewed, healed and restored by a fresh encounter with God.** It did not come in the form of a dramatic manifestation, but through a still, small voice. – *1 Kings 19:11-12*

21 – God’s process of restoration for Elijah included...

- Reaffirming his trust of him – *1 Kings 19:15-16a*
- Giving him a spiritual son – *1 Kings 19:16b*
- Calling him out of a victim mentality – *1 Kings 19:14,18*

The victim mentality (“Woe is me!”) is an expression of self-centeredness and immaturity, energized from wounded areas within that have trapped us in childhood. Seeking to draw attention to the self, it is part of the old man.

No child of God is a victim. We have a heavenly Father who is all-powerful, all-loving, ever with us, always for us, able to protect us, and always providing what we truly need. In his love and wisdom, he at times allows us to experience the consequences of our own fallen state, and the lostness all around us. This provides us with opportunities for further maturing.

Our destiny is not determined by what happens to us, much of which we cannot control. Our life path will be shaped by how we respond to what happens to us – by the person we are becoming on the inside.

Article 79: Queen Esther

5th Century B.C.

In the years of Judah's captivity, a beautiful Jewish orphan called Esther was introduced to the court of King Xerxes. The king favored Esther more than the other virgins and chose her as his queen, knowing nothing of her ancestry. When the Jews in Persia faced the threat of annihilation, Esther courageously identified with her people and interceded for them. Her story is a testament to the power of prayer, fasting, and the favor of the Heavenly King upon the righteous.

* * * * *

Esther 2:8-10 – When the king's order and edict had been proclaimed, many girls were brought to the citadel of Susa and put under the care of Hegai. Esther also was taken to the king's palace and entrusted to Hegai, who had charge of the harem. The girl pleased him and won his favor... Esther had not revealed her nationality and family background, because Mordecai had forbidden her to do so.

Esther 2:18 – Now the king was attracted to Esther more than to any of the other women, and she won his favor and approval more than any of the other virgins. So he set a royal crown on her head and made her queen instead of Vashti.

Esther 4:5-8 – Then Esther summoned Hathach, one of the king's eunuchs assigned to attend her, and ordered him to find out what was troubling Mordecai and why. So Hathach went out to Mordecai in the open square of the city in front of the king's gate. Mordecai told him everything that had happened to him, including the exact amount of money Haman had promised to pay into the royal treasury for the destruction of the Jews. He also gave him a copy of the text of the edict for their annihilation, which had been published in Susa, to show to Esther and explain it to her, and he told him to urge her to go into the king's presence to beg for mercy and plead with him for her people.

Esther 4:10-11 – Then she instructed him to say to Mordecai, "All the king's officials and the people of the royal provinces know that for any man or woman who approaches the king in the inner court without being summoned the king has but one law: that he be put to death. The only exception to this is for the king to extend the gold scepter to him and spare his life. But thirty days have passed since I was called to go to the king."

Esther 4:12-14 – When Esther's words were reported to Mordecai, he sent back this answer: "Do not think that because you are in the king's house you alone of all the Jews will escape. For if you remain silent at this time, relief and deliverance for the Jews will arise from another place, but you and your father's family will perish. And who knows but that you have come to royal position for such a time as this?"

Esther 4:15-17 – Then Esther sent this reply to Mordecai: "Go, gather together all the Jews who are in Susa, and fast for me. Do not eat or drink for three days, night or day. I and my maids will fast as you do. When this is done, I will go to the king, even though it is against the law. And if I perish, I perish." So Mordecai went away and carried out all of Esther's instructions.

Esther 5:1-2 – On the third day Esther put on her royal robes and stood in the inner court of the palace, in front of the king's hall. The king was sitting on his royal throne in the hall, facing

the entrance. When he saw Queen Esther standing in the court, he was pleased with her and held out to her the gold scepter that was in his hand. So Esther approached and touched the tip of the scepter.

Esther 5:3 – Then the king asked, "What is it, Queen Esther? What is your request? Even up to half the kingdom, it will be given you."

Esther 5:4 – "If it pleases the king," replied Esther, "let the king, together with Haman, come today to a banquet I have prepared for him."

Esther 7:1-2 – So the king and Haman went to dine with Queen Esther, and as they were drinking wine on that second day, the king again asked, "Queen Esther, what is your petition? It will be given you. What is your request? Even up to half the kingdom, it will be granted."

Esther 7:3-4 – Then Queen Esther answered, "If I have found favor with you, O king, and if it pleases your majesty, grant me my life—this is my petition. And spare my people—this is my request. For I and my people have been sold for destruction and slaughter and annihilation. If we had merely been sold as male and female slaves, I would have kept quiet, because no such distress would justify disturbing the king."

Esther 7:5 – King Xerxes asked Queen Esther, "Who is he? Where is the man who has dared to do such a thing?"

Esther 7:6 – Esther said, "The adversary and enemy is this vile Haman." Then Haman was terrified before the king and queen.

Esther 8:16 – For the Jews it was a time of happiness and joy, gladness and honor. In every province and in every city, wherever the edict of the king went, there was joy and gladness among the Jews, with feasting and celebrating. And many people of other nationalities became Jews because fear of the Jews had seized them.

Esther 9:27-29 – The Jews took it upon themselves to establish the custom that they and their descendants and all who join them should without fail observe these two days every year, in the way prescribed and at the time appointed.... And these days of Purim should never cease to be celebrated by the Jews, nor should the memory of them die out among their descendants. So Queen Esther, daughter of Abihail, along with Mordecai the Jew, wrote with full authority to confirm this second letter concerning Purim.

Article 80: Mary, the Mother of Our Lord

1st Century

Genesis 3:15 – [spoken by the LORD to the serpent] “And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers; he will crush your head, and you will strike his heel.”

Isaiah 7:14 – Therefore the Lord himself will give you a sign: The virgin will be with child and will give birth to a son, and will call him Immanuel.

Matthew 1:18 – This is how the birth of Jesus Christ came about. His mother Mary was pledged to be married to Joseph, but before they came together, she was found to be with child through the Holy Spirit.

Matthew 1:22-23 – All this took place to fulfill what the Lord had said through the prophet: “The virgin will be with child and will give birth to a son, and they will call him Immanuel” – which means, “God with us.”

Luke 1:26-28 – In the sixth month, God sent the angel Gabriel to Nazareth, a town in Galilee, to a virgin pledged to be married to a man named Joseph, a descendent of David. The virgin’s name was Mary. The angel went to her and said, “Greetings, you who are highly favored! The Lord is with you.”

Luke 1:29-33 – Mary was greatly troubled at his words and wondered what kind of greeting this might be. But the angel said to her, “Do not be afraid, Mary, you have found favor with God. You will be with child and give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus. He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David, and he will reign over the house of Jacob forever; his kingdom will never end.”

Luke 1:34-35 – “How will this be,” Mary asked the angel, “since I am a virgin?” The angel answered, “The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. So the holy one to be born will be called the Son of God.”

Luke 1:38 – “I am the Lord’s servant,” Mary answered. “May it be to me as you have said.”....

Luke 1:39-45 – At that time Mary got ready and hurried to a town in the hill country of Judah, where she entered Zachariah’s home and greeted Elizabeth. When Elizabeth heard Mary’s greeting, the baby leaped in her womb, and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit. In a loud voice she exclaimed: “Blessed are you among women, and blessed is the child you will bear! But why am I so favored that the mother of my Lord should come to me? As soon as the sound of your greeting reached my ears, the baby in my womb leaped for joy. Blessed is she who has believed that what the Lord has said to her will be accomplished.”

Luke 1:46-49 – And Mary said: “My soul praises the Lord and my spirit rejoices in God my Savior, for he has been mindful of the humble state of his servant. From now on all generations will call me blessed, for the Mighty One has done great things for me—holy is his name.”

Luke 2:4-7 – So Joseph also went up from the town of Nazareth in Galilee to Judea, to Bethlehem the town of David, because he belonged to the house and line of David. We went there to register with Mary, who was pledged to be married to him and was expecting a child. While they were there, the time came for the baby to be born, and she gave birth to her

firstborn, a son. She wrapped him in cloths and placed him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.

Luke 2:28-32 – Simeon took him in his arms and praised God, saying: “Sovereign Lord, as you have promised, you now dismiss your servant in peace. For my eyes have seen your salvation, which you have prepared in the sight of all people, a light for revelation to the Gentiles and for glory to your people Israel.”

Luke 2:33-35 – The child’s father and mother marveled at what was said about him. Then Simeon blessed them and said to Mary, his mother: “This child is destined to cause the falling and rising of many in Israel, and to be a sign that will be spoken against, so that the thoughts of many hearts will be revealed. And a sword will pierce your own soul too.”

Luke 2:46, 48, 51 – After three days they found him in the temple courts, sitting among the teachers, listening to them and asking them questions... His mother said to him, “Son, why have you treated us like this? Your father and I have been anxiously searching for you.”... Then he went down to Nazareth with them and was obedient to them. But his mother treasured all these things in her heart.

John 2:1-5 – On the third day a wedding took place at Cana in Galilee. Jesus’ mother was there, and Jesus and his disciples had also been invited to the wedding. When the wine was gone, Jesus’ mother said to him, “They have no more wine.” “Dear woman, why do you involve me?” Jesus replied, “My time has not yet come.” His mother said to the servants, “Do whatever he tells you.”

John 19:25-27 – Near the cross of Jesus stood his mother, his mother’s sister, Mary the wife of Clopas, and Mary of Magdala. When Jesus saw his mother there, and the disciple whom he loved standing nearby, he said to his mother, “Dear woman, here is your son,” and to the disciple, “Here is your mother.” From that time on, this disciple took her into his home.

Acts 1:12-14 – Then they returned to Jerusalem from the hill called the Mount of Olives, a Sabbath day’s walk from the city. When they arrived, they went upstairs to the room where they were staying. Those present were Peter, John, James and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James son of Alphaeus and Simon the Zealot and Judas son of James. They all joined together constantly in prayer, along with the women and Mary the mother of Jesus, and his brothers.

Article 81: Mary's Legacy

A meditation by Amy Cogdell

Mary's dramatic appearance in scripture contrasts vividly with her humble station in life. A poor, young woman living in a small village of an occupied Roman territory receives one of the few angelic visitations recorded in the Bible. Even more surprising are the angel's words, "You have found favor with God."

Certainly Mary must have wondered at this greeting, for there is no indication that she had done anything remarkable in the eyes of man. Yet the eye of God was upon her, seeing into her interior life. Something in her spirit, her private devotion, caught the attention of the Creator, moving him to entrust her with the care of his Only Begotten Son.

We see in Mary a turning point in the history of God's relationship with man. God has come to be with man, to partner with him, and even more miraculously, to live inside of him. The Son of God becomes the Son of Man; the Uncreated clothes Himself in the flesh of his mother.

Mary's witness bears special significance for women. Living with the physical disadvantage of inferior strength and the spiritual stigma of Eve's original sin, Jewish women were regarded as second-class citizens. Traditionally, women were not allowed to testify in legal matters, for their witness was not considered reliable. However, when the time for the Messiah's birth finally arrived, the first person entrusted with the good news was a woman. In contrast to Eve, through whom sin entered the world, Mary welcomed grace through her faith and submission.

Though Mary's recorded words are few, they are instructive. She leaves a legacy of beautiful response to the Father's gift of Jesus, his Son.

"I am the Lord's servant. ...May it be to me as you have said." – Luke 1:38

... "My soul praises the Lord and my spirit rejoices in God my Savior." – Luke 1:46-47

"...From now on all generations will call me blessed, for the Mighty One has done great things for me...." – Luke 1:48-49

"Do whatever he tells you." – John 2:5

Article 82: Simeon and Anna

c. 84 BC – c. 5 AD

When Joseph and Mary went to present Jesus at the Temple, they were met by two unlikely prophets. Simeon and Anna were both elderly; both were “waiting for the consolation of Israel”; and through the power of the Holy Spirit, both recognized the Christ in a tiny baby. Their words ministered to Mary and Joseph, confirming the secret they carried in silence. Their lives epitomized the anointing of the watchman. As friends of God, they were entrusted with the plans of God. They served to bring his kingdom to earth by fasting, praying and waiting in hope for God to fulfill his word.

* * * * *

Luke 2:25-26 – Now there was a man in Jerusalem called Simeon, who was righteous and devout. He was waiting for the consolation of Israel, and the Holy Spirit was upon him. It had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he would not die before he had seen the Lord's Christ.

Luke 2:27-32 – Moved by the Spirit, he went into the temple courts. When the parents brought in the child Jesus to do for him what the custom of the Law required, Simeon took him in his arms and praised God, saying: "Sovereign Lord, as you have promised, you now dismiss your servant in peace. For my eyes have seen your salvation, which you have prepared in the sight of all people, a light for revelation to the Gentiles and for glory to your people Israel."

Luke 2: 33-35 – The child's father and mother marveled at what was said about him. Then Simeon blessed them and said to Mary, his mother: "This child is destined to cause the falling and rising of many in Israel, and to be a sign that will be spoken against, so that the thoughts of many hearts will be revealed. And a sword will pierce your own soul too."

Luke 2:36-37– There was also a prophetess, Anna, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher. She was very old; she had lived with her husband seven years after her marriage, and then was a widow until she was eighty-four. She never left the temple but worshiped night and day, fasting and praying.

Luke 2:38– Coming up to them at that very moment, she gave thanks to God and spoke about the child to all who were looking forward to the redemption of Jerusalem.

Luke 39-40 – When Joseph and Mary had done everything required by the Law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee to their own town of Nazareth. And the child grew and became strong; he was filled with wisdom, and the grace of God was upon him.

Article 83: John the Beloved

1st century

The apostolic legacy of John is complementary to that of Paul. Rather immature when we first meet him in the Gospels, he becomes “the disciple whom Jesus loved,” the one who “leaned on Jesus’ breast,” to whom our Lord was able to entrust awesome visions in the Book of Revelation. John lived out a life-long practice of the Presence of God, becoming Apostolic Father to all called to the contemplative life. His spiritual line includes Anthony of Egypt and the Desert Fathers and Mothers, a movement that gave birth to monasticism. Tradition holds that he alone of the twelve lived to be an old man and is buried in Ephesus.

Through his influence and writings, John was a Father to the spiritually vibrant, missionary-oriented Celtic church. *Ancient Wells* seeks to honor and emulate the tradition of the Celtic church.

* * * * *

Mark 3:16-17 – These are the twelve he appointed: Simon... James son of Zebedee and his brother John (to them he gave the name Boanerges, which means Sons of Thunder)...

Mark 10:35-38, 40 – ...James and John...came to him. “Teacher...do for us whatever we ask.” “What do you want...?” he asked.... “Let one of us sit at your right and the other at your left in your glory.” “You don’t know what you are asking,” Jesus said.... “...These places belong to those for whom they have been prepared.”

Matthew 17:1-3 – ...Jesus took with him Peter, James and John...and led them up a high mountain by themselves. There he was transfigured before them. His face shone like the sun, and his clothes became as white as the light. Just then there appeared before them Moses and Elijah, talking with Jesus.

John 13:21-26 – ...Jesus was troubled in spirit and testified, “... one of you is going to betray me.” His disciples stared at one another... the disciple whom Jesus loved was reclining next to him. Simon Peter motioned to this disciple..., “Ask him which one he means.” Leaning back against Jesus, he asked him, “Lord, who is it?” Jesus answered, “It is the one to whom I will give this piece of bread when I have dipped it in the dish.” Then, dipping the piece of bread, he gave it to Judas Iscariot...

Matthew 26:36-37 – Then Jesus went with his disciples to a place called Gethsemane, and he said to them, “Sit here while I go over there and pray.” He took Peter and the two sons of Zebedee along with him, and he began to be sorrowful and troubled.

John 19:25-27 – Near the cross of Jesus stood his mother... When Jesus saw his mother there and the disciple whom he loved standing nearby, he said to his mother, “Dear woman, here is your son,” and to the disciple, “Here is your mother.” From that time on, this disciple took her into his home.

John 20:1-8 – Early on the first day of the week...Mary Magdalene went to the tomb and saw that the stone had been removed... She came running to Simon Peter and the other disciple, the one Jesus loved, and said, “They have taken the Lord out of the tomb, and we don’t know where they have put him!” So Peter and the other disciple started for the tomb. Both were running, but the other disciple...reached the tomb first.... Then Simon Peter...arrived and went into the tomb.... Finally the other disciple...went inside. He saw and believed.

John 21:1, 4-8 – Afterward Jesus appeared again to his disciples, by the Sea of Tiberias.... Early in the morning, Jesus stood on the shore, but the disciples did not realize that it was Jesus. He called out to them, "Friends haven't you any fish?" "No," they answered.... "Throw your net on the right side of the boat...."....they were unable to haul the net in because of the large number of fish. Then the disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter, "It is the Lord!"

John 21:24-25 – This is the disciple who testifies to these things and who wrote them down.... Jesus did many other things as well. If every one of them were written down, I suppose that even the whole world would not have room for the books that would be written.

Acts 4:5-7, 13 – The next day the rulers, elders and teachers of the law met in Jerusalem.... They had Peter and John brought before them: "By what power or what name did you do this?"... When they saw the courage of Peter and John and realized that they were unschooled, ordinary men, they were astonished and they took note that these men had been with Jesus.

1 John 1:1-4 – That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked at and our hands have touched – this we proclaim concerning the Word of life. The life appeared; we have seen it and testify to it, and we proclaim to you the eternal life, which was with the Father and has appeared to us. We proclaim to you what we have seen and heard, so that you also may have fellowship with us. And our fellowship is with the Father and with his Son, Jesus Christ.

Revelation 1:9-11 – I, John, your brother and companion in the suffering and kingdom and patient endurance that are ours in Jesus, was on the island of Patmos because of the word of God and the testimony of Jesus. On the Lord's Day I was in the Spirit, and I heard behind me a loud voice like a trumpet, which said: "Write on a scroll what you see and send it to the seven churches..."

Revelation 5:13-14 – Then I heard every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and on the sea, and all that is in them, singing: "To him who sits on the throne and to the Lamb be praise and honor and glory and power, for ever and ever!" The four living creatures said, "Amen," and the elders fell down and worshipped.

Revelation 22:17,20 – The Spirit and the bride say, "Come!" And let him who hears say, "Come!" Whoever is thirsty, let him come; and whoever wishes, let him take the free gift of the water of life.... He who testifies to these things says, "Yes, I am coming soon." Amen. Come, Lord Jesus. [*Aramaic* → *Maranatha*]

Article 84: The Apostle Paul

c. 5- c. 68

Apart from Jesus himself, no human shaped Christianity more than Saul (Paul) of Tarsus. The source of Paul's influence, however, was not his great intellect, nor his extensive learning, nor any other human factor or ability. His influence flowed from the profound degree to which he allowed God to shape his inner person into Christ's likeness, and the consequent anointing of the Holy Spirit released upon him as an apostle.

Romans 1:1 – Paul, a servant of Christ Jesus, called to be an apostle and set apart for the gospel of God

Galatians 1:1, 11-12 – Paul, an apostle—sent not from men nor by man, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him from the dead—.... I want you to know, brothers, that the gospel I preached is not something that man made up. I did not receive it from any man, nor was I taught it; rather, I received it by revelation from Jesus Christ.

Acts 9:1-2 – Meanwhile, Saul was still breathing out murderous threats against the Lord's disciples. He went to the high priest and asked him for letters to the synagogues in Damascus, so that if he found any there who belonged to the Way...he might take them as prisoners to Jerusalem.

Acts 9:3-6 – As he neared Damascus on his journey, suddenly a light from heaven flashed around him. He fell to the ground and heard a voice say to him, "Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?" "Who are you, Lord?" Saul asked. "I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting," he replied. "Now get up and go into the city, and you will be told what you must do."

Acts 9:10-16 – In Damascus there was a disciple named Ananias. The Lord called to him in a vision, "Ananias!" "Yes, Lord," he answered.... "Go to the house of Judas on Straight Street and ask for a man from Tarsus named Saul, for he is praying.... This man is my chosen instrument to carry my name before the Gentiles and their kings and before the people of Israel. I will show him how much he must suffer for my name."

Acts 13:1-3 – In the church at Antioch there were prophets and teachers: Barnabas, Simeon called Niger, Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen ...and Saul. While they were worshipping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, "Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them. So after they had fasted and prayed, they placed their hands on them and sent them off.

1 Corinthians 4:9 – For it seems to me that God has put us apostles on display at the end of the procession, like men condemned to die in the arena....

1 Corinthians 4:10-13 – We are fools for Christ, but you are so wise in Christ! We are weak, but you are strong! You are honored, we are dishonored! To this very hour we go hungry and thirsty, we are in rags, we are brutally treated, we are homeless. We work hard with our own hands. When we are cursed, we bless; when we are persecuted, we endure it; when we are slandered, we answer kindly. Up to this moment we have become the scum of the earth, the refuse of the world.

1 Corinthians 4:15-16 – Even though you have ten thousand guardians in Christ, you do not have many fathers, for in Christ Jesus I became your father through the gospel. Therefore I urge you to imitate me.

2 Corinthians 4:7-12 – But we have this treasure in jars of clay to show that this all surpassing power is from God and not from us. We are hard pressed on every side, but not crushed; perplexed, but not in despair; persecuted, but not abandoned; struck down, but not destroyed. We always carry around in our body the death of Jesus, so that the life of Jesus may also be revealed in our body. For we who are alive are always being given over to death for Jesus' sake, so that his life may be revealed in our mortal body. So then, death is at work in us, but life is at work in you.

2 Corinthians 12:7-10 – To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me. Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. But he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness." Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me.... For when I am weak, then I am strong.

Philippians 3:8-10 – ...I consider everything a loss compared to the surpassing greatness of knowing Christ Jesus my Lord, for whose sake I have lost all things. I consider them rubbish, that I may gain Christ and be found in him, not having a righteousness of my own that comes from the law, but that which is through faith in Christ—the righteousness that comes from God and is by faith. I want to know Christ and the power of his resurrection and the fellowship of sharing in his sufferings, becoming like him in his death,

Romans 11:1-2, 26-27 – I ask then: Did God reject his people? By no means! I am an Israelite myself, a descendent of Abraham, from the tribe of Benjamin. God did not reject his people, whom he foreknew.... And so all Israel will be saved, as it is written: "The deliverer will come from Zion; he will turn godlessness away from Jacob. And this is my covenant with them when I take away their sins." (*Isaiah 59:20-21; Jer. 31:33-34*)

2 Timothy 4:6-8 – ...I am already being poured out like a drink offering, and the time has come for my departure. I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith. Now there is in store for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord...will award to me on that day—and not only to me, but also to all who have longed for his appearing.

1 Corinthians 13:13 – And now these three remain: faith, hope and love. But the greatest of these is love.

Article 85: Ignatius, Bishop of Antioch

c. 35-107

Ignatius of Antioch, thought to have been a disciple of the apostle John, became the third Bishop (or Patriarch) of Antioch. Eusebius indicates he succeeded Evodius around 68. Other accounts suggest Ignatius was appointed to this office by the apostle Peter.

During the reign of the Emperor Trajan, Ignatius was arrested, condemned to death, and transported to Rome to die in the arena. In dealing harshly with one of their leaders, imperial authorities hoped to intimidate rank and file Christians.

But Ignatius seized the opportunity to encourage the faithful, speaking to groups of Christians at every town along his route to Rome. When his escort reached the west coast of Asia Minor, delegations from several Asian churches visited him, speaking with him at length, assisting him with items for his journey, and bidding him an affectionate farewell, commending him to the grace of God.

During this time he wrote seven letters, six to churches and one to Polycarp, Bishop of Smyrna, another second-generation church leader and disciple of the Apostle John.

Ignatius is considered one of the apostolic fathers of the Church in that he had direct links with the apostles. His letters give important insight into the early development of Christian theology and practice.

He stressed the importance of loyalty to the Bishop in each city, and to those who assisted him in service: the presbyters (priests) and deacons. Here is clear indication that this Church structure was in place as early as the generation after the apostles. Ignatius also stressed the value of the Eucharist, showing the Church's understanding of the Presence of Christ in the elements.

Ignatius was the first to refer to the Church using the word "catholic", by which he meant "universal". He viewed Christ as the center around whom the Church comes together. "Wherever Jesus Christ is, there is the catholic church."

Ignatius went to his death in the Flavian Amphitheater in Rome.

From the letter to the Romans by Ignatius of Antioch

I am writing to all the churches to let it be known that I will gladly die for God if only you do not stand in my way. I plead with you: show me no untimely kindness. Let me be food for the wild beasts, for they are my way to God. I am God's wheat and shall be ground by their teeth so that I may become Christ's pure bread. Pray to Christ for me that the animals will be the means of making me a sacrificial victim for God.

No earthly pleasures, no kingdoms of this world can benefit me in any way. I prefer death in Christ Jesus to power over the farthest limits of the earth. He who died in place of us is the one object of my quest. He who rose for our sakes is my one desire.

The time for my birth is close at hand. Forgive me, my brothers. Do not stand in the way of my birth to real life; do not wish me stillborn. My desire is to belong to God. Do not, then, hand me back to the world. Do not try to tempt me with material things. Let me attain pure light. Only on my arrival there can I be fully a human being. Give me the privilege of imitating the passion of my God. If you have

him in your heart, you will understand what I wish. You will sympathize with me because you will know what urges me on.

The prince of this world is determined to lay hold of me and to undermine my will which is intent on God. Let none of you here help him; instead show yourselves on my side, which is also God's side. Do not talk about Jesus Christ as long as you love this world. Do not harbor envious thoughts. And supposing I should see you, if then I should beg you to intervene on my behalf, do not believe what I say. Believe instead what I am now writing to you. For though I am alive as I write to you, still my real desire is to die. My love of this life has been crucified, and there is no yearning in me for any earthly thing. Rather within me is the living water which says deep inside me: "Come to the Father." I no longer take pleasure in perishable food or in the delights of this world. I want only God's bread, which is the flesh of Jesus Christ, formed of the seed of David, and for drink I crave his blood, which is love that cannot perish.

From his letter to the Ephesians

Ignatius, who is also called Theophorus, to the Church which is at Ephesus in Asia...Abundant happiness through Jesus Christ, and his undefiled grace.

I do not issue orders to you, as if I were some great person. For though I am bound for the name of Christ, I am not yet perfect in Jesus Christ. Now I begin to be a disciple, and I speak to you as fellow-disciples with me...For the sake of love, I exhort you, that you would all run together in accordance with the will of God. For Jesus Christ, our inseparable life, is the mind of the Father; just as bishops, appointed over the whole earth, are in conformity with the mind of Jesus Christ.

It is fitting that you should run together in accordance with the will of your bishop, as in fact you do. For your renowned presbytery, worthy of God, is fitted exactly to the bishop as strings are to the harp. Therefore in your concord and harmonious love, Jesus Christ is sung. And you, man by man, become a choir, taking up the song of God in unison, that you may sing with one voice to the Father through Jesus Christ. It is profitable, therefore, to live in blameless unity, and thus enjoy communion with God.

Pray without ceasing on behalf of other men, for there is hope of their repentance. See, then, that they are instructed by your works, if in no other way. Be meek in response to their wrath, humble in opposition to their boasting, respond with prayer to blasphemy; and for their cruelty, manifest your gentleness...

The last times are come upon us. Let us therefore be of a reverent spirit, and fear the long-suffering of God. For let us either stand in awe of the wrath to come, or show regard for the grace which is presently displayed--one of two things. Only let us be found in Christ Jesus. Apart from Him, let nothing attract you. For Him I wear these bonds, these spiritual jewels...

Remember me as Jesus Christ also remembered you. Pray for the Church which is in Syria, from whence I am led bound to Rome. Farewell in God the Father, and in Jesus Christ, our common hope.

Article 86: Polycarp, Bishop of Smyrna

69-155

Polycarp is one of the most revered of the apostolic fathers – that generation of bishops who received their faith from the original apostles. This makes him Jesus’ spiritual grandson! Tradition suggests that he was discipled by John the Beloved, who made him Bishop of Smyrna (modern Izmir) in 96. As a young man he kissed the chains of Ignatius of Antioch when the latter passed through Smyrna *en route* to his martyrdom in Rome. Polycarp was widely Loved and respected.

As an old man he was burned alive in a stadium during a wave of persecution. At the time of his arrest in 155 he was 86 years old and had served as a bishop for decades. The description of his death was circulated in a letter from the church in Smyrna and is the oldest account of a Christian martyrdom after that of Stephen found in Acts 7. The narrative below is recorded in *History of the Church* by the early Church historian Eusebius⁴⁹

* * * * *

He stepped forward and was asked by the proconsul if he really was Polycarp. When he said yes, the proconsul urged him to deny the charge.

“Respect your years!” he exclaimed, adding similar appeals regularly made on such occasions: “Swear by Caesar’s fortune; change your attitude; say: Away with the godless!”

But Polycarp, with his face set, looked at the crowd in the stadium and waved his hand towards them, sighed, looked up to heaven, and cried: “Away with the godless!”

The governor pressed him further: “Swear and I will set you free: execrate Christ.”

“For eighty-six years,” replied Polycarp, “I have been his servant, and he has never done me wrong: how can I blaspheme my king who saved me?”

“I have wild beasts,” said the proconsul. “I shall throw you to them, if you don’t change your attitude.”

“Call them,” replied the old man. “We cannot change our attitude if it means a change from better to worse. But it is a splendid thing to change from cruelty to justice. ”

“If you make light of the beasts,” retorted the governor, “I’ll have you destroyed by fire, unless you change your attitude.”

Polycarp answered: “The fire you threaten burns for a time and is soon extinguished: there is a fire you know nothing about—the fire of the judgment to come and of eternal punishment, the fire reserved for the ungodly. But why do you hesitate? Do what you want.”

The proconsul was amazed, and sent the crier to stand in the middle of the arena and announce three times: “Polycarp has confessed that he is a Christian.”... Then a shout went up from every throat that Polycarp must be burnt alive...

The rest followed in less time than it takes to describe: the crowds rushed to collect logs and faggots from workshop and public baths...When the pyre was ready...Polycarp prayed:

⁴⁹ *The History of Christianity*, a Lion Handbook publication. p. 81.

“O Father of thy beloved and blessed Son, Jesus Christ, through whom we have come to know thee, the God of angels and powers and all creation, and of the whole family of the righteous who live in thy presence; I bless thee for counting me worthy of this day and hour, that in the number of the martyrs I may partake of Christ’s cup, to the resurrection of eternal life of both soul and body in the imperishability that is the gift of the Holy Spirit...”

When he had offered up the Amen and completed his prayer, the men in charge lit the fire, and a great flame shot up.

Article 87: Anthony of Egypt

c. 251-356

Anthony belongs to the contemplative stream of the Church, in the line of the apostle John. The singular focus of his long life was the pursuit of intimacy with God, and the purity of life and wholeness of person that are its fruits. Yet, in the sovereignty of God, apart from any intention on his part, Anthony's influence catalyzed a movement known in history as The Desert Fathers and Mothers. Hundreds withdrew to the deserts of Egypt, Palestine and Syria, seeking an environment conducive to a deep pursuit of God. From this spiritual soil the monastic movement sprouted. Springing originally from the life of the Church in the east, monasticism began to spread westward through *The Life of Anthony* written by Athanasius, Bishop of Alexandria – the same Athanasius who played a crucial role in forming the Nicene Creed. Reflections below on Anthony's life are quoted from *The Way of the Heart* by Henri M. Nouwen.

* * * * *

St. Anthony, the "father of monks," is the best guide in our attempt to understand the role of solitude in ministry. Born around 251, Anthony was the son of Egyptian peasants. When he was about eighteen years old he heard in church the Gospel words, "Go and sell what you own and give the money to the poor...then come and follow me".... Anthony realized...these words were meant for him....

After a period of living as a poor laborer at the edge of his village, he withdrew into the desert, where for twenty years he lived in complete solitude. During these years Anthony experienced a terrible trial. The shell of his superficial securities was cracked and the abyss of iniquity was opened to him. But he came out of this trial victoriously – not because of his own willpower or ascetic exploits, but because of his unconditional surrender to the Lordship of Jesus Christ.

When he emerged from his solitude, people recognized in him the qualities of an authentic "healthy" man, whole in body, mind, and soul. They flocked to him for healing, comfort and direction. In his old age, Anthony retired to an even deeper solitude to be totally absorbed in direct communion with God.

The story of St. Anthony...shows that we must be made aware of the call to let our false, compulsive self be transformed into the new self of Jesus Christ. It also shows that solitude is the furnace in which this transformation takes place. Finally, it reveals that it is from this transformed or converted self that real ministry flows.

* * * * *

Thomas Merton writes in the introduction to his *The Wisdom of the Desert*:

Society...was regarded [by the Desert Fathers] as a shipwreck from which each single individual man had to swim for his life...These were men who believed that to let oneself drift along, passively accepting the tenets and values of what they knew as society, was purely and simply a disaster.

This...leads us...to the core of the [minister's] problem. Our society is not a community radiant with the love of Christ, but a dangerous network of domination and manipulation in which we can easily get entangled and lose our soul. The basic question is whether we ministers of Jesus Christ have not already been so deeply molded by the seductive powers of

our dark world that we have become blind to our own and other people's fatal state and have lost the power and motivation to swim for our lives.

* * * * *

...Anthony... had to face his enemies – anger and greed – head-on and let himself be totally transformed into a new being. His old, false self had to die and a new self had to be born. For this, Anthony withdrew into the complete solitude of the desert.

Solitude is the furnace of transformation. Without solitude we remain victims of our society and continue to be entangled in the illusions of the false self. Jesus himself entered into this furnace. There he was tempted with the three compulsions of the world: to be relevant (“turn stones into loaves”), to be spectacular (“throw yourself down”), and to be powerful (“I will give you all these kingdoms”).... He affirmed God as the only source of his identity (“You must worship the Lord your God and serve him alone”). Solitude is the place of the great struggle and the great encounter – the struggle against the compulsions of the false self, and the encounter with the loving God who offers himself as the substance of the new self.

* * * * *

Anthony's life after he had emerged from his period of total isolation was blessed by a rich and varied ministry. People from many walks of life came to him and asked for advice. The solitude that at first had required physical isolation had now become a quality of his heart, an inner disposition that could no longer be disturbed by those who needed his guidance. Somehow his solitude had become an infinite space into which anyone could be invited....

And looking into the future, Anthony said words which have an eerie timeliness: “A time is coming when men will go mad, and when they see someone who is not mad, they will attack him saying, ‘You are mad, you are not like us.’”

Through the struggle with his demons and the encounter with his Lord, Anthony had learned to diagnose the hearts of people and the mood of his time and thus to offer insight, comfort, and consolation. Solitude had made him a compassionate man.

Here we reach the point where ministry and spirituality touch each other. It is compassion. Compassion is the fruit of solitude and the basis of all ministry. The purification and transformation that take place in solitude manifest themselves in compassion.⁵⁰

⁵⁰ *The Way of the Heart* by Henri J.M. Nouwen, pages 9-12, 15-16, 23-24.

Article 88: Patrick of Ireland: Missionary Bishop

c. 389-461

Patrick, known in history as the Apostle to Ireland, was not Irish himself but a Briton from England. At age 16 he was kidnapped by Irish raiders from his home village somewhere along the western coast of Roman Britain, and taken to Ireland as a slave. There, after 6 years of much hardship, he turned to the God of his Christian parents. He subsequently escaped, making his way back to his home village, but in time returned to Ireland as a mighty evangelist among the Celts.

Traveling widely and evangelizing tirelessly, Patrick spent thirty years as a missionary bishop. Within ten years he had established his see and formed a network of churches and monasteries throughout the country. He personally baptized tens of thousands of new believers and ordained hundreds of priests. He thus became the spiritual father of the Celtic church, which matured into one of the most powerful missionary movements in history. One of the keys to its fruitfulness was the honor it assigned to the role of the monastic abbot. This allowed for the correct positioning and release of apostolic callings in kingdom advance.

St. Patrick's Breastplate is a very old hymn that has been adapted for prayer and song many times down through the Christian centuries. We have chosen the version below for *Ancient Wells*. It seems to forcefully capture the dominant themes of Patrick's ministry: Trinitarian orientation, Christ-centered life, harmonious relationship with creation and strength and resolve in confronting spiritual enemies. Short, parallel sentences give it a masculine feel. The imagery is that of Christ and the Trinity serving as his strength and protection as he went into spiritual battle against formidable forces of darkness.

* * * * *

St. Patrick's Breastplate

I arise today
 Through a mighty strength, the invocation of the Trinity,
 Through the belief in the threeness,
 Through confession of the oneness
 Of the Creator of Creation.

I arise today
 Through the strength of Christ's birth with his baptism,
 Through the strength of his crucifixion with his burial,
 Through the strength of his resurrection with his ascension,
 Through the strength of his descent for the judgment of Doom.

I arise today
 Through the strength of the love of Cherubim,
 In obedience of angels,
 In the service of archangels,
 In hope of resurrection to meet with reward,

In prayers of patriarchs,
In predictions of prophets,
In preaching of apostles,
In faith of confessors,
In innocence of holy virgins,
In deeds of righteous men.

I arise today
Through the strength of heaven:
Light of sun,
Radiance of moon,
Splendor of fire,
Speed of lightning,
Swiftness of wind,
Depth of sea,
Stability of earth,
Firmness of rock.

I arise today
Through God's strength to pilot me:
God's might to uphold me,
God's wisdom to guide me,
God's eye to look before me,
God's ear to hear me,
God's word to speak for me,
God's hand to guard me,
God's way to lie before me,
God's shield to protect me,
God's host to save me
From snares of devils,
From temptations of vices,
From everyone who shall wish me ill,
Afar and anear,
Alone and in multitude.

I summon today all these powers between me and those evils,
Against every cruel merciless power that may oppose my body and soul,
Against incantations of false prophets,
Against black laws of pagandom
Against false laws of heretics,
Against craft of idolatry,
Against spells of witches and smiths and wizards,
Against every knowledge that corrupts man's body and soul.
Christ to shield me today
Against poison, against burning,

Against drowning, against wounding,
So that there may come to me abundance of reward.

Christ with me, Christ before me, Christ behind me,
Christ in me, Christ beneath me, Christ above me,
Christ on my right, Christ on my left,
Christ when I lie down, Christ when I sit down, Christ when I arise,
Christ in the heart of every man who thinks of me,
Christ in the mouth of everyone who speaks of me,
Christ in every eye that sees me,
Christ in every ear that hears me.

I arise today
Through a mighty strength, the invocation of the Trinity,
Through belief in the threeness,
Through confession of the oneness,
Of the Creator of Creation. ⁵¹

⁵¹ http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Saint_Patrick%27s_Breastplate, June 8, 2010.

Article 89: Teresa of Avila

1515 – 1582

By Amy Cogdell

Teresa of Avila was born to a family of Spanish nobility just two years before Martin Luther posted his Ninety-Five Theses. This placed her life in the heart of the Counter-Reformation, the Catholic response to the grievances of Protestant Reformers. In 1545 the Council of Trent convened to address doctrinal questions and the institutional problems of corrupt bishops and poorly educated priests. Meanwhile, the Holy Spirit was moving on another front, raising up mighty leaders – preachers, teachers, missionaries and mystics – to call the Catholic Church back to her first love. Teresa was among these shining lights, and she remains one of greatest spiritual teachers in Judeo-Christian history.

Stories from the lives of saints captivated young Teresa. When she was only seven years old, she and her brother Rodrigo ran away to preach the gospel to the Moors. Her uncle found the two children outside the city wall and returned them to their parents.

Teresa left home again as a young woman to join a Carmelite convent. Almost immediately, she fell ill. Her sickness progressed to the point of partial paralysis, forcing her to leave the cloister for several years. During this time she read extensively and began to practice the silent “prayer of recollection.” She was blessed with a few mystical experiences, but her desire for approval and recognition held her back. Several of her friends and spiritual advisors believed her visions came from the devil and counseled her to renounce them. Their rejection caused Teresa anguish and doubt, but she persisted in prayer.

When she was thirty-nine years old, Teresa had an encounter with Christ that changed the course of her life. She saw a flame-tipped spear in a vision, and physically felt it pierce her heart repeatedly, lighting an internal fire which never waned.

After this experience Teresa began her apostolic ministry of reform. She founded several convents committed to the original, rigorous rule of the Carmelite order. She also worked to win the hearts of Spanish Jews who had forcibly been converted to Christianity. Her own paternal grandfather had been condemned by the Inquisition for returning to his Jewish practices.⁵²

Teresa also wrote. Her last book, *Interior Castle*, is a masterful study of the soul’s journey toward union with God. It has inspired both Catholics and Protestants for more than four centuries. Dallas Willard writes, “I first studied Teresa of Avila’s *Interior Castle* twenty or so years ago, after many years of efforts to understand, live, and communicate what the spiritual life portrayed in the Bible was meant to be. I had, by then, found many helpful companions on the Way, spread across time and space and from many ‘denominational distinctives.’ But this book and this author immediately announced themselves as a unique presence of God in my life. The book provided instruction on a living relationship with God that I had found nowhere else.”⁵³

Teresa’s writing reveals her exceptional intimacy with God. However, her intimacy never falls into familiarity. Rather, she speaks with a reverence and holy fear lacking in most modern Christian

⁵² http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Teresa_of_Ávila, May 30, 2010.

⁵³ *The Great Omission*, by Dallas Willard, p. 206.

literature. The following excerpt from the introduction to the *Interior Castle* captures the unique balance of confidence and awe characteristic of Teresa's life.

While I was beseeching Our Lord today that He would speak through me, a thought occurred to me which I will now set down, in order to have some foundation on which to build. I began to think of the soul as if it were a castle, made of a single diamond or of a very clear crystal, in which there are many rooms, just as in Heaven there are many mansions. Now, if we think carefully over this, sisters, the soul of the righteous man is nothing but a paradise, in which, as God tells us, He takes His delight. For what do you think a room will be like which is the delight of a King so mighty, so wise, so pure, and so full of good? I can find nothing with which to compare the great beauty of a soul and its great capacity....

For though [the soul] is His creature, and there is therefore as much difference between it and God as between creature and Creator, the very fact that His Majesty says it is made in His image means that we can hardly form any conception of the soul's great dignity and beauty.

It is no small pity, and should cause us no little shame, that, through our own fault, we do not understand ourselves or know who we are. Would it not be a sign of great ignorance, my daughters, if a person were asked who he was, and could not say, and had no idea who his father or his mother was, or from what country he came? Though that is great stupidity, our own is incomparably greater if we make no attempt to discover what we are....

As far as I can understand, the door of entry into this castle is prayer and meditation: I do not say mental prayer rather than vocal prayer, for, if it is prayer at all, it must be accompanied by meditation. If a person does not think Whom he is addressing, and what he is asking for, and who it is that is asking and of Whom he is asking, I do not consider that he is praying at all even though he be constantly moving his lips. True, it is sometimes possible to pray without paying heed to these things, but that is only when they have been thought about previously. If a man is in the habit of speaking to God's Majesty as he would speak to his slave, and never wonders if he is expressing himself properly....I do not call that prayer at all – and God grant that no Christian may ever speak to Him so!....

O souls redeemed by the blood of Jesus Christ! Learn to understand yourselves and take pity on yourselves! Surely, if you understand your own natures, it is impossible that you will not strive to remove the pitch which blackens the crystal.

Article 90: The Ugandan Martyrs

Died June 3, 1896

By Amy Cogdell

The present day church in Uganda was born in 1880. Before the colonial expansion of that age, there was little European interest in Sub-Saharan Africa. But with the explorers and traders came the gospel, and the message of Christ was received with great joy and purity of heart. In six short years, the faith of the Ugandan converts would outshine that of their teachers.

For the Ugandan natives, embracing Christianity meant renouncing old tribal beliefs and practices. It also required a certain degree of loyalty to the western missionaries, either the British Anglicans or the French Catholics. Naturally, this change upset the old political and social order. The young Ugandan King Mwanga felt particularly threatened.

Mwanga was a known pedophile who routinely abused the boys in his court. According to tradition, the king had absolute authority over his subjects. Thus his abuse, though repulsive in the Ugandan culture, was tolerated without question until the conversion of several young men in the king's service.

Among the Catholic converts in the royal court was Joseph Mkasa, the king's chief steward. Mkasa enjoyed a warm friendship with his lord for many years, but when Mwanga ordered the killing of a new Anglican bishop, Mkasa confronted him and condemned the murder. This infuriated the king. Mwanga struck Mkasa with a spear and ordered his execution. On the way to his beheading, Mkasa publically forgave the king, and made one last plea for his repentance.

Charles Lwanga took Mkasa's place as leader of the Christians at court. Like his predecessor, Lwanga worked to keep the young boys away from the king. For six months all was quiet, until Mwanga called for one of his pages. When the king asked why the boy had been away, the youth replied that he had been receiving religious instruction. Mwanga summoned the boy's teacher and killed him on the spot with his own spear. Then he locked the royal compound and summoned his executioners.

Lwanga understood the king's intention. That night he baptized four catechumens, including a thirteen year old named Kizito. The following morning Mwanga summoned his entire court, separating the Christians from the others. He questioned the fifteen believers, all under twenty-five years old, asking if they would choose to remain Christians. When they all resolutely responded, "Yes," he condemned them to death.

Other professing Christians were swept up in the persecution until the condemned numbered twenty-four, thirteen Catholics and eleven Anglicans. They were marched 37 miles to the site of their execution, many singing and rejoicing as they went.

The chief executioner was young Kizito's father. Twice he urged his son to run and hide, but the boy refused. Kizito was killed first. Others were tortured, then wrapped in reed mats and burned on a pyre.⁵⁴

Shortly afterwards, the missionaries were expelled. Without priests and without sacraments, the Ugandan Christians remained steadfast and grew in number. When the Catholic missionaries

⁵⁴ Catholic Online, http://www.catholic.org/saints/saint.php?saint_id=35, June 11, 2010.

returned after King Mwanga's death, they found 500 practicing Christians, and 1,000 catechumens awaiting baptism. The Anglican Church, likewise, was strengthened by the death of her children.

The Ugandan martyrs were canonized in 1964 by Pope Paul VI. The following is an excerpt from his speech.⁵⁵

The African martyrs add another page to the martyrology – the Church's roll of honour – an occasion both of mourning and of joy. This is a page worthy in every way to be added to the annals of that Africa of earlier which we, living in this era and being men of little faith, never expected to be repeated.

In earlier times there occurred those famous deeds, so moving to the spirit, of the martyrs of Scilli, of Carthage, and of that "white robed army" of Utica commemorated by Saint Augustine and Prudentius; of the martyrs of Egypt so highly praised by Saint John Chrysostom, and of the martyrs of the Vandal persecution. Who would have thought that in our days we should have witnessed events as heroic and glorious?

Who could have predicted to the famous African confessors and martyrs such as Cyprian, Felicity, Perpetua and – the greatest of all – Augustine, that we would one day add names so dear to us as Charles Lwanga and Matthias Mulumba Kalemba and their 20 [sic.] companions? Nor must we forget those members of the Anglican Church who also died for the name of Christ.

These African martyrs herald the dawn of a new age. If only the mind of man might be directed not toward persecutions and religious conflicts but toward a rebirth of Christianity and civilisation!

Africa has been washed by the blood of these latest martyrs, the first of this new age (and, God willing, let them be the last, although such a holocaust is precious indeed). Africa is reborn free and independent.

⁵⁵http://www.crossroadsinitiative.com/library_article/934/Martyrs_of_Uganda_Paul_VI.html June 11, 2010.

Article 91: Thérèse of Lisieux: "The Little Flower"

1873-1897

By Amy Cogdell

Thérèse Martin was born in Alençon, France, the youngest child of devout Catholic parents. In their youth, both of Thérèse's parents sought to enter monastic orders, but were turned away. As a consolation, Thérèse's mother asked God to allow her to bear many children and consecrate them all to him.

Thérèse did indeed feel called to religious life at an early age. Actually, she dreamed of spiritual heroism – becoming a priest, preaching the gospel in foreign lands, and martyrdom – but since those doors were closed to her, she begged both God and man for entrance into the Carmelite convent of Lisieux at the age of fifteen. There, hidden from the eyes of the world, Thérèse found her path to greatness.

Thérèse learned to follow Christ in "the little way," by offering every act of service, bearing every small trial with joy as a gift to God. "Love proves itself by deeds, so how am I to show my love? Great deeds are forbidden me. The only way I can prove my love is by scattering flowers and these flowers are every little sacrifice, every glance and word, and the doing of the least actions for love."

Thérèse's time in the convent was short. In 1896, at the age of twenty-three, she contracted tuberculosis. Eighteen months later she died. During her illness, Thérèse wrote a personal memoir. She began the work in obedience to her superior, who was also her sister. The last few chapters were literally written on her deathbed. This autobiography was entitled *The Story of a Soul* and was published posthumously.

The book immediately struck a chord with the simple faithful who saw in Thérèse's "little way" a practical, attainable path to holiness. Church leaders also recognized the inspired wisdom of Thérèse's life. She was canonized in 1925 and became known as "The Little Flower," distinguishing her from the other great Carmelite saint, Teresa of Avila. A century after her death, John Paul II declared the young French nun a doctor of the Catholic Church, one of only three women to hold that title. Here are Thérèse's own words from *The Story of a Soul*:⁵⁶

Since my longing for martyrdom was powerful and unsettling, I turned to the epistles of Saint Paul in the hope of finally finding an answer. By chance the twelfth and thirteenth chapters of the first epistle to the Corinthians caught my attention, and in the first section I read that not everyone can be an apostle, prophet or teacher, that the Church [sic.] is composed of a variety of members, and that the eye cannot be the hand. Even with such an answer before me, I was not satisfied and did not find peace.

I persevered in the reading and did not let my mind wander until I found this encouraging theme: *Set your desires on the greater gifts. And I will now show you the way which surpasses all others.* For the Apostle insists that the greater gifts are nothing at all without

⁵⁶ <http://www.gutenberg.org/etext/16772>, July 7, 2010.

love and that this same love is surely the best path leading directly to God. At length I had found peace of mind.

When I looked upon the mystical body of the Church, I recognized in myself none of the members which St. Paul described, and what is more, I desired to distinguish myself more favorably within the whole body. Love appeared to me to be the hinge for my vocation.

Indeed I knew that the Church had a body composed of various members, but in this body the necessary and more noble member was not lacking; I knew that the Church had a heart and that such a heart appeared to be aflame with love. I knew that one love drove the members of the Church to action, that if this love were extinguished, the apostles would have proclaimed the Gospel no longer, the martyrs would have shed their blood no more.

I saw and realized that love sets off the bounds of all vocations, that love is everything, that this same love embraces every time and every place. In one word, that love is everlasting.

Then, nearly ecstatic with the supreme joy in my soul, I proclaimed: O Jesus, my love, at last I have found my calling: my call is love. Certainly I have found my proper place in the Church, and you gave me that very place, my God. In the heart of the Church, my mother, I will be love, and thus I will be all things, as my desire finds its direction.

Article 92: Edith Stein

1891 – 1942

By Amy Cogdell

Edith Stein was born in Germany, the youngest of eleven children in a devout Jewish family. From childhood Edith displayed a brilliant intelligence and sensitivity. She excelled in school and pursued graduate studies in philosophy.

During her studies, Edith experienced a series of spiritual crises. She lost her faith as a teenager and entered the university as an atheist. However, many of her colleagues at Göttingen became Christians, and their conversions re-awakened her own spiritual hunger. Still, she feared that embracing religion would cause her to lose her intellectual independence.

A turning point came with the death of her Christian friend and mentor, Adolph Reinach, who died on the battlefield in WWI. Like many Germans during the war, Edith was mired in depression. Naturally, she expected Reinach wife's to be overcome with despair. Instead, she witnessed a supernatural peace and confidence in the resurrection. In her words: "It was my first encounter with the Cross and the divine power that it bestows on those who carry it. For the first time, I was seeing with my very eyes the Church, born from her Redeemer's sufferings, triumphant over the sting of death. That was the moment my unbelief collapsed and Christ shone forth – in the mystery of the cross."

Edith's final reservations were overcome one evening while reading the autobiography of St. Teresa of Avila. She was baptized into the Catholic Church on New Year's Day 1922. A Lutheran friend stood as her godmother.

Edith's devout Jewish mother wept over daughter's conversion, though Edith herself experienced a deeper connection with her Jewish identity. Whenever Edith stayed with her mother, she attended synagogue, praying the psalms from her missal. Shortly before her death Edith told her confessor, "You don't know what it means to me to be a daughter of the chosen people, not only spiritually, but according to the flesh."

Edith continued teaching and lecturing after her conversion, eventually winning a post at the Institute for Pedagogy in Münster. She was an eloquent advocate of women's suffrage and women's studies, though she had grown remarkably gentle and humble through her conversion. One of her favorite topics was the nature of women and their motherly role in restoring a war-torn world.

When anti-Semitic persecution shut the doors on her academic career, Edith entered the Carmelite convent in Cologne, taking the name Teresia Benedicta a Cruce – Teresa, Blessed by the Cross. There Edith spent long hours in silent prayer.

The cloister did not insulate Edith from the suffering of the day as she kept an active correspondence with many friends and relatives. She saw the cloud gathering over her people with prophetic prescience. In June, 1939, she wrote this testament:

I beg the Lord to take my life and my death...for all concerns of...the holy church, especially for the preservation of our holy order, in particular the Carmelite monasteries of Cologne and Echt, as atonement for the unbelief of the Jewish People and that the Lord will be received by his own people and his kingdom shall come in glory, for the salvation of Germany and the

peace of the world, at last for my loved ones, living or dead, and for all God gave to me: that none of them shall go astray.

Edith had two opportunities to escape the Holocaust. She was invited to teach in South America. She was also offered a transfer to a convent in Switzerland. However, both of these moves would have required her to leave her sister Rosa behind in the Dutch convent where they had taken refuge. On July 26, 1942 the Catholic Bishop of Utrecht wrote a pastoral letter calling for prayers for the Jews and denouncing their persecution. Retaliation came swiftly. Within a week all Catholic Jews were arrested. When the police came for Edith and her sister, Edith responded calmly, "Come, Rosa. We go for our people." She died at Auschwitz on August 9, 1942.⁵⁷

"More than anything else today, what is needed is the baptism of spirit and fire. This alone can prepare those who shape human life to take their rightful place at the front lines in the great battle between Christ and Lucifer." - Edith Stein, from a lecture given in Essen

⁵⁷ Herbstrith, Waltraud. 1992. *Edith Stein: A Biography*. Translator, Fr. Bernard Bonowitz. 2nd English edition. Ignatius Press: San Francisco.

Article 93: Cardinal Jean-Marie Lustiger 1926-2007

This account was taken from an Associated Press report published in the Jerusalem Post on August 10, 2007.

* * * * *

Jews and Catholics joined Friday to intone a sacred Jewish prayer in Notre Dame Cathedral at the funeral of Jewish-born Cardinal Jean-Marie Lustiger.

Lustiger's mother was killed at the Auschwitz death camp. He later worked to reconcile Catholics and Jews, and asked that his funeral include both faiths. One of modern France's most influential churchmen, he died Sunday at age 80.

Hundreds of people, including prominent Jewish leaders of France, Holocaust survivors and French President Nicolas Sarkozy, saw Lustiger's simple wooden coffin carried through crowds and placed in front of 12th century Notre Dame.

Lustiger's great-grand-nephew Jonas read a psalm in Hebrew and French, and placed a bowl of earth gathered from Jewish and Christian sites in the Holy Land on the coffin.

An 83-year-old Nazi death camp survivor and cousin of the cardinal, Arno Lustiger, led the reading of the Mourner's Kaddish, among a series of prayers central to Jewish worship.

Born in 1926 in Paris to Polish immigrant parents who ran a hosiery shop, Jean-Marie (Aron) Lustiger was sent to Orleans, south of Paris, to take refuge from the occupying Nazis. There he converted to Catholicism at the age of 14, replacing the name Aron with Jean-Marie. He was ordained a priest in 1954, ultimately becoming archbishop of Paris, a post he held for 24 years before stepping down in 2005.

In a sign of his significance, Sarkozy – raised Catholic but whose maternal grandfather was Jewish – left his US vacation to jet to Paris for the funeral.

Lustiger, a close confidant of the late Pope John Paul II, was accessible and engaging. He never rejected his Jewish identity. Before his death, he asked that a commemorative plaque be placed inside Notre Dame reading:

I was born Jewish.
I received my paternal grandfather's name, Aron.
I became Christian by faith and baptism.
I remained Jewish like the Apostles did.☞

Article 94: The Ten Boom Family

20th Century

By Amy Cogdell

"I pity the poor Germans, Corrie. They have touched the apple of God's eye." These words, both prophetic and merciful, were spoken by Casper Ten Boom at the outbreak of World War II. Ten Boom was a watchmaker, a devout member of the Dutch Reformed Church, and the father of four children – Willem, Nollie, Betsie and Corrie. For many years, he and his wife, along with their children and three aunts, lived a humble life in the rooms above the family's watch shop in Haarlem. However, there was a spiritual depth forged in each family member during those quiet years which would shine like gold in fires of persecution.

Daily scripture reading was the foundation of Ten Boom family life. This devotion served as the springboard for many charitable and evangelistic works before the war. It also shaped their understanding of history in a unique way. They were among the few in their generation convinced of God's eternal covenant of love with the Jewish people.

After the Nazi occupation of Holland, all four children and their elderly father became involved in the Dutch underground. In the beginning, they served by smuggling Jews to safe homes in the countryside. They also helped provide these people with false identification and ration cards. Their efforts aided over 800 Jews in hiding.

By 1943, most willing homes were filled, but Jews kept coming to the Ten Boom home for help. In response, Casper, Betsie and Corrie built a secret room in the house they shared. There they sheltered up to six Jews at a time for the next year.

Heavy traffic in and out of the house aroused suspicion. On February 28, 1944, the family was betrayed and the Gestapo raided their home. The police set a trap and waited throughout the day, seizing everyone who came to the house. By evening about 30 people had been taken into custody. Willem, Nollie and a grandson, Peter, were at the house that day and were taken to prison. They were eventually released, but Corrie, Betsie and Casper were held.

Casper Ten Boom was 84 years old at the time. When police questioned him, asking if he knew that he could die for aiding the Jews, he replied, "It would be an honor to die for God's ancient people." It was an honor God granted. Casper died of natural causes after ten days in custody.

Betsie and Corrie spent the next ten months in three different prisons. They were finally moved to the Ravensbruck concentration camp where they found unthinkable conditions – suffocating stenches, overcrowding, starvation, and fleas. The godliness of Betsie's response to this suffering stunned even Corrie.

Betsie remembered Paul's instruction to give thanks in every circumstance, and she followed this word with a dogged determination. She thanked God that the guards had not discovered their Bible. She thanked God for the crowding, because so many women would hear the gospel. Finally, she thanked God for the fleas.

Betsie's faith was vindicated. Because of the fleas, the German guards would not enter the women's bunkhouse. This gave the sisters the opportunity to hold nightly prayer meetings where scores of women flocked to take comfort in the words of scripture.

Betsie died a few days before Corrie's release from Ravensbruck. Before her death, Betsie had a vision in which she saw homes of restoration for those who had survived the concentration camps. She also foresaw Corrie's ministry of reconciliation to the Germans.

Corrie lived to see Betsie's vision come true. She established homes, and travelled widely preaching a message of forgiveness and reconciliation. She also wrote a book about her family and their wartime experience entitled *The Hiding Place*. In 1967, the Yad Vashem Remembrance Authority of Israel honored Corrie as one of the Righteous Among the Nations. The following passage is an excerpt from *The Hiding Place*.

It was in a church in Munich...It was 1947 and I had come from Holland to defeated Germany with the message that God forgives. ...

And that's when I saw him, working his way forward against the others. It came back with a rush: the huge room with its harsh overhead lights, the pathetic pile of dresses and shoes in the center of the floor, the shame of walking naked past this man. I could see my sister's frail form ahead of me, ribs sharp beneath the parchment skin. Betsie how thin you were!

"You mentioned Ravensbruck in your talk," he was saying. "I was a guard in there. But since that time," he went on, "I have become a Christian. I know that God has forgiven me for the cruel things I did there, but I would like to hear it from your lips as well. *Fraulein*,..." his hand came out, ... "will you forgive me?"

And I stood there — I whose sins had every day to be forgiven — and could not. Betsie had died in that place — could he erase her slow terrible death simply for the asking?

It could not have been many seconds that he stood there, hand held out, but to me it seemed hours as I wrestled with the most difficult thing I had ever had to do.

For I had to do it — I knew that. The message that God forgives has a prior condition: that we forgive those who have injured us. "If you do not forgive men their trespasses," Jesus says, "neither will your Father in heaven forgive your trespasses." ...

And still I stood there with the coldness clutching my heart. But forgiveness is not an emotion — I knew that too. Forgiveness is an act of the will, and the will can function regardless of the temperature of the heart. "Jesus, help me!" I prayed silently. "I can lift my hand, I can do that much. You supply the feeling."

And so woodenly, mechanically, I thrust my hand into the one stretched out to me. And as I did, an incredible thing took place. The current started in my shoulder, raced down my arm, sprang into our joined hands. And then this healing warmth seemed to flood my whole being, bringing tears to my eyes.

"I forgive you, brother!" I cried. "With all my heart!" For a long moment we grasped each other's hands, the former guard and the former prisoner. I had never known God's love so intensely as I did then.⁵⁸

⁵⁸ <http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/questionofgod/voices/boom.html>, June 13, 2010.

PART XV: CREEDS OF THE CHURCH

Article 95: The Apostles' Creed

3rd century

The Apostles' Creed developed from the "Rule of Faith" that emerged from the writings of several early Church Fathers, such as Irenaeus and Tertullian. It was used as a summary of Christian doctrine for baptismal candidates in the churches of Rome. The creed was designed as a statement of the essentials of the faith as espoused by the Apostles, although there is no assertion that it was crafted by any of the Apostles. Each of the doctrines found in it can be traced to statements current in the apostolic period. The earliest written version is perhaps the Interrogatory Creed of Hippolytus (ca. 215).

This is a masterpiece of writing. It summarizes in relatively few words the broad sweep of Christian belief in a way that is easy to memorize. It reveals the high value early Church leaders placed on the spiritual formation of baptismal candidates, a process that in some cases lasted three years. During this period of Church history, baptism could lead to persecution or even martyrdom. The creed was retained by Protestant Reformers such as Luther and Calvin in their liturgies, and in the liturgy of the Church of England. It is widely used among Christians in modern times.

I believe in God, the Father almighty,
creator of heaven and earth.

I believe in Jesus Christ his only Son, our Lord.
He was conceived by the power of the Holy Spirit
and born of the Virgin Mary.
He suffered under Pontius Pilate,
was crucified, died, and was buried.
He descended to the dead.
On the third day he rose again.
He ascended into heaven,
and is seated at the right hand of the Father.
He will come again to judge the living and the dead.

I believe in the Holy Spirit,
the holy catholic Church,
the communion of saints,
the forgiveness of sins, the resurrection of the body,
and the life everlasting. Amen.⁵⁹

⁵⁹ *Book of Common Prayer*, page 96.

Article 96: The Nicene Creed

4th century

The emperor Constantine convened a Church council in Nicea in 325 A.D. to have the Church clarify contested areas of doctrine. The most significant of these was whether Jesus Christ was a created being, or an eternal being equal to God the Father. A creed confirming the Deity of Christ was written and signed by a majority of the bishops. In 381 a second Church council met in Constantinople that adopted a revised and expanded form of the 325 creed, now known as the Nicene Creed. This magnificent work of biblical interpretation, done by our fathers in the faith, has provided the theological foundation for the doctrines of the Deity of Christ and the Trinity up through modern times. Protestant reformers like Luther and Calvin kept the Nicene Creed in their liturgies. It has become the most ecumenical of creeds. Most Protestant churches join with the Eastern Orthodox and Roman Catholic churches in affirming it.

We believe in one God,
the Father, the Almighty,
maker of heaven and earth,
of all that is, seen and unseen.

We believe in one Lord, Jesus Christ,
the only Son of God,
eternally begotten of the Father,
God from God, Light from Light,
true God from true God,
begotten, not made,
of one Being with the Father.

Through him all things were made.

For us and for our salvation he came down from heaven:

by the power of the Holy Spirit he became incarnate from the Virgin Mary, and was made man.

For our sake he was crucified under Pontius Pilate; he suffered death and was buried.

On the third day he rose again in accordance with the Scriptures;

he ascended into heaven and is seated at the right hand of the Father.

He will come again in glory to judge the living and the dead, and his kingdom will have no end.

We believe in the Holy Spirit, the Lord, the giver of life,
who proceeds from the Father and the Son.⁶⁰

With the Father and the Son he is worshipped and glorified.

He has spoken through the Prophets.

We believe in one holy catholic and apostolic Church.

We acknowledge one baptism for the forgiveness of sins.

We look for the resurrection of the dead, and the life of the world to come.

Amen.⁶¹

⁶⁰ The Orthodox church does not include the words "and the Son".

⁶¹ *Book of Common Prayer*, p. 358.

PART XVI: BIBLICAL PRAYERS

Article 97: Development of New Testament Worship: Part 2

Acts 4:24-30 is one of the earliest recorded Christian prayers. It shows warm familiarity with the Psalms, and an easy spontaneity in using them in prayer. These earliest followers of Jesus were Jewish, rooted in and formed by the liturgical worship of the temple and synagogue, where Psalms played a central role. Having come to faith in Jesus as the Jewish Messiah, it never occurred to them that this called into question their Jewishness or that Jewish worship no longer applied.

(incomplete)

PART XVII: PRAYERS OF THE CHURCH

Article 98: Kyrie Eleison⁶²

One of the earliest prayers of the Church

Kyrie eleison.

Lord, have mercy.

Christe eleison.

Christ, have mercy.

Kyrie Eleison.

Lord, have mercy.

Article 99: The Jesus Prayer

Lord Jesus Christ, Son of the living God, have mercy on me, a sinner.

Article 100: For the Church⁶³

At least 500 years old

Gracious Father, we pray for thy holy catholic Church. Fill it with all truth, in all truth with all peace. Where it is corrupt, purify it; where it is in error, direct it; where in any thing it is amiss, reform it. Where it is right, strengthen it; where it is in want, provide for it; where it is divided, reunite it; for the sake of Jesus Christ thy Son our Savior. *Amen.*

Article 101: To You All Hearts Are Open⁶⁴

From an ancient Latin prayer, translated by Archbishop Cranmer (1489-1556) for the Anglican Communion service

Almighty God, to you all hearts are open, all desires known, and from you no secrets are hid: Cleanse the thoughts of our hearts by the inspiration of your Holy Spirit, that we may perfectly love you, and worthily magnify your holy Name; through Christ our Lord. *Amen.*

⁶² *Book of Common Prayer*, p. 132.

⁶³ *Book of Common Prayer*, p. 816.

⁶⁴ *Book of Common Prayer: Selected Liturgies – English*, p. 212.

PART XVIII: TEACHINGS

Article 102: Apprenticeship to Jesus: Foundational Understandings

By George Miley

This teaching was given at the Antioch Network Gathering in Frisco, CO–January, 2009

In Apprenticeship to Jesus, by faith...

- 1 – We establish Jesus as Master Teacher for our lives.
- 2 – We experience Jesus delivering us from the effects of sin.
- 3 – We learn how to be with Jesus 24/7.
- 4 – We learn to live out the reality of our baptism.
- 5 – We learn the habit of relying on the Holy Spirit.
- 6 – We learn to obey, and we learn how to obey.
- 7 – We are being transformed into his likeness in each component of our person.

* * * * *

- 1 – We establish Jesus as Master Teacher for our lives.

"You call me Teacher and Lord—and you are right, for that is what I am." – John 13:13

"Come to me, all you that are weary and are carrying heavy burdens, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn from me; for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For my yoke is easy and my burden is light." – Matthew 11:28-30

- 1) **Jesus taught from wisdom unparalleled in human history.** He preeminently understands how human life was created to function.

"The Queen of the South will rise up at the judgment with this generation and condemn it, because she came from the ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon, and see, someone greater than Solomon is here!" – Matthew 12:42

...the knowledge of God's mystery, that is, Christ himself, in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge. – Colossians 2:2-3

- 2) The Apostles, apprentices who were with him on earth, are our most important source for understanding and interpreting what Jesus taught.

For I want you to know, brothers and sisters, that the gospel that was proclaimed by me is not of human origin; for I did not receive it from a human source, nor was I taught it, but I received it through a revelation of Jesus Christ. – Galatians 1:11-12

- 3) **How to enter and live in the Kingdom of God was the integrating theme of Jesus' teaching.** He began his ministry by calling the people to repentance, and by announcing the immediate availability of the Kingdom to all who would enter via him. – Matthew 4:17

- 4) **Who is our teacher?** What is the source of the ideas and convictions that are shaping the course of our lives? Whom have we allowed, perhaps unknowingly, to teach us? In Apprenticeship to Jesus we submit all these to Jesus.
- 5) **Recalibrate priorities.** The more we understand the depth of our need, the more we rearrange our priorities to allow maximum time and energy for learning from Jesus.

"The kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field, which someone found and hid; then in his joy he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field." – Matthew 13:44

2 – We experience Jesus delivering us from the effects of sin

The next day [John the Baptist] saw Jesus coming toward him and declared, "Here is the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!" – John 1:29

- 1) **Salvation:** Many understand Biblical salvation as being about freeing us from sin's **guilt**. And that it certainly does! But the Biblical scope of salvation is broader. Salvation means **deliverance**, and the Exodus is an important Biblical symbol. God miraculously delivered Israel from Egypt, led them through the Red Sea, formed them for 40 years in the desert, and offered them the Promised Land. He made every provision for complete deliverance from their bondage. That's what Jesus does! He offers **every provision for progressive deliverance** from the bondages of sin: temptation, guilt, compulsive behavior, destructive habits, emptiness, loneliness, despair, meaninglessness, etc. This deliverance becomes our personal reality as we become his apprentices.

Jesus answered them, "Very truly I tell you, everyone who commits sin is a slave to sin. The slave does not have a permanent place in the household; the son has a place there forever. So if the Son makes you free, you will be free indeed." – John 8:34-36

- 2) **A process:** This deliverance comes gradually as the result of a process of obedience that makes space for the transforming power of the Holy Spirit. There may well be crisis experiences along the way which are gifts of God's grace. But...

"Any crisis, not followed by a process, will soon become an abscess." – George Verwer

"The Holy Spirit will not do it **to** you, or **for** you; He will do it **with** you." – Dallas Willard

- 3) What has sin done to me?

- + It has made me guilty before God.
- + It has separated me from unbroken fellowship with God for which my soul craves.
- + Separated from my Father's affirmation, I am deeply insecure—unaware of who I am.
- + Inner drives to prove I am valuable have formed harmful compulsivities in my soul.
- + My soul has been left wounded, fragmented, disordered and chaotic.
- + I have been wounded further by the sin others have committed against me.
- + But I have responded to their sin by my own sinful choices; the cycle goes deeper.

- 4) The healing of my soul is crucial to the process of my deliverance from sin's consequences. *Unhealed woundedness leaves me blocked in immaturity.*

- 5) In broad strokes, my healing takes place as:

- + I come present to God, who is always there, and abide in his Presence listening.
- + I obey what I hear the Spirit say to me.

6) Three major areas of healing for each of us: – Leanne Payne

- + Inability to accept myself–Distant from my Father, I lack affirmation only he can give.
- + Inability to forgive – As a child of God, I am not a victim.
- + Inability to receive forgiveness – Sin has left me vacillating between pride and inferiority.

3 – We learn how to be with Jesus 24/7.

"Abide in me as I abide in you. Just as the branch cannot bear fruit by itself unless it abides in the vine, neither can you unless you abide in me." – John 15:4

1) **Apprenticeship to Jesus:** I am with Jesus, to learn from Jesus, how to be like Jesus – Dallas Willard

2) **In the Presence of Jesus,** abiding 24/7 in him, ever listening and obeying, we are progressively transformed by the Holy Spirit.

And all of us, with unveiled faces, seeing the glory of the Lord as though reflected in a mirror, are being transformed into the same image from one degree of glory to another; for this comes from the Lord, the Spirit. –2 Corinthians 3:18

3) We need more than teachings which excite the intellect. We are transformed by being with a Person.

"And this is eternal life, that they may know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom you have sent." – John 17:3

4) **How to be with Jesus** is one of the most important things we can learn, and then pass on to other apprentices.

5) God comes to us through:

- + **The Scriptures:** Meditate on them day and night – Psalm 1:2
- + **The Holy Spirit:** He is always with us – John 14:16-17
- + **Worship and prayer:** Pray without ceasing – 1 Thessalonians 5:17
- + **The Creation:** The heavens are telling the glory of God – Psalm 19:1
- + **The healing silences:** Re-prioritize life's commitments – Psalm 62:1-2
- + **The Church:** Christ's physical Presence on earth – Ephesians 1:22-23
- + **The Lord's Supper:** The body and blood of the Lord – 1 Corinthians 11:27
- + **The events of daily life:** Learn how to respond to them correctly – Romans 8:28

6) **Jesus (also the Father and the Spirit) lives in us** – John 14:17, 20, 23. God's Presence is not usually discernable to the human senses. Though we cannot see, hear, touch, taste or smell him, he is still there. That is why we walk by faith. Of course, being God, he can reveal himself at any time and in any way he chooses. We learn to base our decisions on the fact that he is always there. – Matthew 28:20

7) **To Jesus, the seen world was only one part of universal reality.** As his apprentices, we learn to establish our lives on his worldview. We mature from having faith **in** Jesus to growing in the faith **of** Jesus.

4 – We learn to live out the reality of our baptism.

1) **Jesus lived this rhythm:** He gave up his own life/received from God a new life.

Let the same mind be in you that was in Christ Jesus, who, though he was in the form of God, did not regard equality with God as something to be exploited, but emptied himself, taking the form of a slave, being born in human likeness. And being found in human form, he humbled himself and became obedient to the point of death—even death on a cross. Therefore God also highly exalted him and gave him the name that is above every name... – Philippians 2:5-9

2) **Jesus taught this rhythm:** We give up our old life/receive from God a new life.

Then Jesus told his disciples, "If any want to become my followers, let them deny themselves and take up their cross and follow me. For those who want to save their life will lose it, and those who lose their life for my sake will find it." – Matt. 16:24-25

3) The apostles lived this rhythm:

But we have this treasure in clay jars, so that it may be made clear that this extraordinary power belongs to God and does not come from us. We are afflicted in every way, but not crushed; perplexed, but not driven to despair; persecuted, but not forsaken; struck down, but not destroyed; always carrying in the body the death of Jesus, so that the life of Jesus may also be made visible in our bodies. For while we live, we are always being given up to death for Jesus' sake, so that the life of Jesus may be made visible in our mortal flesh. So death is at work in us, but life in you. – 2 Corinthians 4:7-12

4) The apostles taught this rhythm:

...I have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I who live, but it is Christ who lives in me. And the life I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me –Gal. 2:20

5) This is the rhythm of baptism:

What then are we to say? Should we continue in sin in order that grace may abound? By no means! How can we who died to sin go on living in it? Do you not know that all of us who have been baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death? Therefore we have been buried with him by baptism into death, so that, just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, so we too might walk in newness of life. For it we have been united with him in a death like his, we will certainly be united with him in a resurrection like his. We know that our old self was crucified with him so that the body of sin might be destroyed, and we might no longer be enslaved to sin.... So you also must consider yourselves dead to sin and alive to God in Christ Jesus. – Romans 6:1-6, 11

6) Note how the apostolic proclamation of the gospel was formulated:

Repent...be baptized...receive the Holy Spirit. – Acts 2:38

- 7) **Perhaps the contrasts between the old life and the new life** that so frequently appear in Scripture are remnants of early baptismal instructions.⁶⁵
- 8) **From the earliest Church history** baptism was viewed as initiation into Christ.
- 9) **Allowing our baptism to work in us means:** We make daily decisions in harmony with what is true: We have been placed by God in Christ. Our old person, formed by self-will, died when Christ died. We were raised by God to a new life when Christ was raised. This new life is a life of grace, a life in the Spirit, a life in which self-will does not work, a life in the Kingdom of God, a life of indescribable fullness and joy. But it is a life we must receive and grow into—even strive after. – Phil. 2:12-13; 3:11-14
- 10) **Daily decisions to obey create an environment** for the crucified life. Living the crucified life habitually makes space for the Spirit to establish the resurrected life.
- 11) **Another expression of this rhythm is weakness/strength ... vulnerability/power.**

But he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for power is made perfect in weakness." So, I will boast all the more gladly of my weaknesses, so that the power of Christ may dwell in me." – 2 Corinthians 12:9

- 12) **What happened when we were baptized?** Was our baptism only an occasion on which we bore testimony to our faith? Or do the words of Scripture lead us to understand that in God a transaction took place? Our baptism anchors us in history—both ours and Christ's. It sets an overall framework for ongoing transformation into Christlikeness.

5 – We learn the habit of relying on the Holy Spirit – John 14:15-17

- 1) Jesus promised the Holy Spirit would come giving life in fullness—John 7:37-39
- 2) **Jesus said it was good that he go away** so the Spirit could come.—John 16:7
- 3) Jesus sent the Holy Spirit to guide us into all truth. – John 16:12-14
- 4) **Note again the formulation:** Repent...be baptized...receive the Spirit – Acts 2:38
- 5) The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of Jesus – Romans 8:9

- 6) **The Spirit does the work of transformation.** As we make decisions to obey, we make space in our souls for his transforming work. – Galatians 5:22-23

6 – We learn to obey, and we learn how to obey.

- 1) **Jesus taught that we are to obey God.** That means it is possible – John 14:15.

"I cannot decide in my own strength to make myself holy. But ***I can decide to obey.***"
– Leanne Payne, emphasis added

- 2) **There may be areas where, for now, we are unable to obey** (e.g., forgive our enemy). But if we make the decision to learn, Jesus will teach us how.

- 3) **We are not speaking here of perfection, but of victory.** Daily confession of sins is appropriate. It is a powerful spiritual discipline that advances our growth in holiness.

⁶⁵ See Webber, Robert. *Worship Old & New*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1994, p. 43.

- 4) **Increasingly we live in the awareness** of our own weakness and vulnerability, and the power God is working in us to live in victory over sin. – Philippians 3:10-16
- 5) **The ability to obey God is a profound grace.** It allows us to function properly. It opens the way to live with God in his kingdom. It makes possible the healing of our souls. Its fruit is fulfillment, meaning and joy. Obedience is for our benefit, not God's.
- 6) **To obey God requires that we be transformed.** We do not arrive at obedience by mustering up more will-power. That only yields repeated failure and ultimate despair.

"Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you clean the outside of the cup and of the plate, but inside they are full of greed and self-indulgence. You blind Pharisee! First clean the inside of the cup, so that the outside also may become clean." – Matthew 23: 25-26

My little children, for whom I am again in the pain of childbirth until Christ is formed in you. – Galatians 4:19

7 – We are being transformed into his likeness in each component of our person.

- 1) **We learn to obey God by allowing him to transform us** into the kind of person who is like God and therefore behaves like God.
- 2) **Jesus forgave his enemies on the cross.** This is not surprising. It was simply an expression of the kind of person he was on the inside.
- 3) By the time we realize we need to be formed in the image of Christ we have already been formed by environments of sin. **Now our need is to be transformed.**
- 4) **The human person has great capacity to learn and store knowledge.** This learning and storing begins in the womb. Much of our learning is subconscious and intuitive. Before the infant comes to a clear self-awareness, he/she has learned and stored away large quantities of knowledge, responses and behaviors, e.g., family and cultural behaviors, language, etc. This process continues throughout life.
- 5) **From the moment we were conceived, we have been immersed in environments of sin:** the sin of our parents and the environments which formed them, the sin of our siblings and other family members and the environments which formed them, the sin of our peers and the environments which formed them, and the sins of our people and our world. Before we become aware of it, we are formed in and by sin.
- 6) **It is "in our members" that sinful compulsions are stored.** Think of these as learned behaviors – habits – deeply imbedded in the parts of our person.

*I do not understand what I do. For what I want to do I do not do, but what I hate I do. And if I do what I do not want to do.... It is no longer I myself who do it, but it is sin living in me. I know that nothing good lives in me, that is, in **my sinful nature**.... Now if I do what I do not want to do, it is no longer I who do it, but it is **sin living in me** that does it.... So I find this law at work: When I want to do good, **evil is right there with me**. For in my inner being I delight in God's law; but I see another law at work **in the members of my body**, waging war against the **law of my mind** and making **me a prisoner of the law of sin** at work **within my members**. – Romans 7:15-23*

- 7) However we are to understand the sinful behaviors that are imbedded in us, it is crucial that we not view them as being beyond transformation. Scripture is clear that we are not their prisoners. Christ has not abandoned us to a life of defeat.

Wretched man that I am! Who will rescue me from this body of death? Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, with my mind I am a slave to the law of God, but with my flesh I am a slave to the law of sin.... For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and death. – Romans 7:24-25; 8:2

8) Christians often think of the human person as having three components: spirit, soul and body – 1 Thessalonians 5:23

9) **The Scriptures use various formulations to describe the human person.** The following understanding of the components of a human person, reflected in Mark 12:28-31, draws upon Dallas Willard's *Renovation of the Heart*:

- + **will** (heart, spirit) – These three terms are understood as describing the same reality – the executive center of the self. Here life direction is set. We trust the Holy Spirit to set into our wills Godly ability to make decisions to obey. This Spirit-given ability stands in sharp contrast to our own will-power, which will only lead to a cycle of failure and despair. Decisions to trust and obey make room for the Spirit to further the work of transformation.
- + **thoughts (mind)** – The mind is usually depicted as composed of **thoughts** and **emotions**. We normally have far more control over our thoughts than our emotions. The healing and ordering of the person follows as we make decisions to place our thoughts on God and his ways. We embrace spiritual disciplines to keep them there. Over time, our emotions progressively follow.
- + **emotions (mind)** – God has emotions. Our emotions are fundamentally good – God given. But sin has twisted and damaged our emotions, and thus unrestrained release of emotion without discernment can quickly lead to chaos and destructive behavior. We live in a society that elevates emotions without discernment. To feel something is to validate it. The way of Jesus is not to repress emotions, but to transform them.
- + **body** (strength) – The different components of the person affect one another. For example, what we decide to do with our body will have an effect, positive or negative, on the other parts of our person. This is a key understanding in relationship to spiritual disciplines. Conversely, many illnesses of the body are caused by disorder in our thoughts, emotions and social context.
- + **social context** – Created in the image of God, we are social beings. Wounding and disorder in other parts of our person, e.g., in our emotions, lead to dysfunction in our social context. This in turn negatively impacts our thoughts, emotions, body, etc.
- + **soul** – The soul can be understood as analogous to a software program whose function is to keep all components of the person integrated into a healthily functioning whole. One consequence of sin is a disordered soul. One part of us fights against another, e.g., our emotions against our will. Many persons are out of touch with their souls. Sin has resulted in deep inner pain, and we have responded to this pain by “blocking out” to avoid it. Hence we are often unaware why we do much of what we do. As Christ heals us, our souls come into increasing order and wholeness in God.

10) **Spiritual disciplines serve to train the components of the self.** They operate much like physical disciplines athletes use to train the body. They carry no inherent merit. If they lead to spiritual pride they should be dropped immediately. When undertaken in faith and obedience, they make space for the Spirit to enter our lives with his transforming power.

Spiritual formation in Christ is the process whereby the six basic aspects in every human life [listed above] are increasingly organized around God as they are restored and sustained by him. It results in loving God with all the heart, soul, mind and strength, and [loving] neighbor as oneself. The person is fully integrated under God⁶⁶

Some Sources:

The Gospels – The apostles, Jesus' first apprentices, record his activities/teachings

Acts, Epistles, Revelation – The apostles interpret/give perspective to Jesus' teachings

Moses, all the Prophets, all the Scriptures – They speak of Jesus Messiah – Luke 24:27, 44

Imitation of Christ – Thomas à Kempis

The Divine Conspiracy – Dallas Willard

Renovation of the Heart – Dallas Willard

Hearing God – Dallas Willard

The Spirit of the Disciplines – Dallas Willard

The Cost of Discipleship – Dietrich Bonhoeffer

The Celebration of Discipline – Richard Foster

The Healing Presence – Leanne Payne

Restoring the Christian Soul – Leanne Payne

Listening Prayer – Leanne Payne

Of Water & the Spirit – Alexander Schmemmann

⁶⁶ Dallas Willard in *Renovation of the Heart*.

Article 103: Principles in Spiritual Battle

Preparing the Way for the Lord

By George Miley

This teaching was given at the Antioch Network Gathering in Frisco, CO–January, 2009

The ultimate victory over Satan was won by Jesus Christ, the Son of God.....

*The Son of God was revealed for this purpose, to destroy the works of the devil – I
John 3:8b*

He is the Mighty Warrior in spiritual battle – the one who does the fighting. We follow him, trust him, obey him and thus prepare the way for him.

The most significant act of spiritual battle ever performed was when Jesus went to the cross.

He disarmed the rulers and authorities and made a public example of them, triumphing over them in the cross. – Colossians 2:15

Thus the question as to how we are to engage in spiritual battle becomes a study of how Jesus went to the cross. How he went to the cross informs us as to how we are to follow him into battle.

We do what we see him doing, just as he did what he saw the Father doing.

Jesus said to them, "Very truly, I tell you, the Son can do nothing on his own, but only what he sees the Father doing; for whatever the Father does, the Son does likewise. – John 5:19

God is a God of incarnation. This is of primary importance. God's ways do not circumvent the human being. He works first in and then through persons. The first 30 years of Jesus' life were spent primarily growing in the knowledge of his Father and his Father's ways. This process of maturing was preparation for all that was to come. When Jesus began his public ministry, the time had come for God to work increasingly through him.

Although he was a Son, he learned obedience through what he suffered; and having been made perfect, he became the source of eternal salvation for all who obey him. – Hebrews 5:8-9

The transformation of a fallen human being into the likeness of Christ is the most profound and foundational miracle of the Holy Spirit. This is what we are to seek. This qualifies us for spiritual battle. But it is not instantaneous or automatic: it is a process. As Christ is increasingly formed in us, the Spirit is increasingly freed to do his works through us. The gifts of the Spirit, and the effects that come from them, rest on the foundation of Christlike character. Without the maturing of character, the gifts and their effects malfunction.

As he moved toward the cross, the kind of person Jesus had become was publically manifested.

How Did Jesus Approach the Cross?

1 – Jesus centered himself in God:

Jesus, knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he had come from God and was going to God...." – John 13:3

In spiritual battle, we intentionally center ourselves in the Triune God: Father, Son and Holy Spirit. We come present to him and establish practices that support us in remaining there. We practice his Presence.

- We frame our days with a rhythm of prayer.
- Ancient liturgies are sources of spiritual grounding, guidance and strength.
- We prepare to wait for extended times in his Presence. He is in control.
- We confess our sins to God and, where appropriate, to one another.
- We are careful not to over-emphasize the Holy Spirit. As we relate Biblically to the triune God – Father, Son and Holy Spirit – the Holy Spirit takes his proper place among us.
- We are careful not to center ourselves in manifestations: signs, miracles, angels, words, etc. Our center is God himself. As we abide in his Presence, he gives manifestations as he wills.

There is danger that unwise activities designed to encounter the unseen world can bring intercessors, unawares, into contact with spiritual darkness in ways that leave them (us) unprotected and vulnerable. This can result in harmful physical symptoms, unexplained sicknesses, confusion in ministry, and disorder in life. Be warned! The powers of darkness know the future to some degree, and can work manifestations.

...test the spirits to see whether they are from God; for many false prophets have gone out into the world. – 1 John 4:1

2 – Jesus carried his spiritual authority in humility, restraint and servanthood:

Jesus, knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he had come from God and was going to God, got up from the table, took off his outer robe, and tied a towel around himself. Then he poured water into a basin and began to wash the disciples' feet and to wipe them with the towel that was tied around him – John 13:3-5

3 – Jesus refused to rely upon the world's methods:

Jesus answered, "My kingdom is not from this world. If my kingdom were from this world, my followers would be fighting to keep me from being handed over to the Jews. But as it is, my kingdom is not from here." – John 18:36

In spiritual battle, we fight with the weapons and methods of the Spirit.

4 – Jesus was in full submission to his Father's will, even when it was extremely costly:

"Father, if you are willing, remove this cup from me; yet, not my will but yours be done." – Luke 22:42

5 – Jesus' inner life was rooted in and formed by the ancient worship traditions of God's people:

Then Jesus, crying with a loud voice, said, "Father, into your hands I commend my spirit." Having said this, he breathed his last. – Luke 23:46 (quoting from Psalm 31:5)

6 – Jesus was prepared to wait for and discern God's timing:

When the wine gave out, the mother of Jesus said to him, "They have no wine." And Jesus said to her, "Woman, what concern is that to you and to me? My hour has not yet come." – John 2:3-4

Now before the festival of the Passover, Jesus knew that his hour had come to depart from this world and go to the Father.... – John 13:1

7 – Jesus was not deceived by human praise:

How can you believe when you accept glory from one another and do not seek the glory that comes from the one who alone is God? – John 5:44

"No man appears in safety before the public eye unless he first relishes obscurity. No man is safe in speaking unless he loves to be silent. No man rules safely unless he is willing to be ruled. No man commands safely unless he has learned well how to obey. No man rejoices safely unless he has within him the testimony of a good conscience."⁶⁷

There is cause for caution and concern when, in the name of spiritual battle, personalities are spotlighted, reports are triumphal and crowds grow in number.

To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me. Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. But he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness." Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me. – 2 Corinthians 12:7-9

8 – Jesus cautioned against inappropriately focusing on the miraculous:

"On that day many will say to me, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and cast out demons in your name, and do many deeds of power in your name?' Then I will declare to them, 'I never knew you; go away from me, you evildoers.'" – Matthew 7:22-23

The miraculous can originate from sources other than God.

Moses and Aaron did just as the LORD commanded. In the sight of Pharaoh and of his officials he lifted up the staff and struck the water in the river, and all the water in the river was turned into blood....But the magicians of Egypt did the same by their secret arts... – Exodus 7:20, 22

9 – Jesus did not emphasize the role of angels:

"Do you think that I cannot appeal to my Father, and he will at once send me more than twelve legions of angels? But how then would the scriptures be fulfilled, which say it must happen in this way?" – Matthew 26:53-54

But he did welcome their ministry in appropriate ways:

"Then an angel from heaven appeared to him and gave him strength." – Luke 22:43

An inappropriate search for contact with angels can unintentionally expose us to spiritual darkness:

Do not let anyone disqualify you, insisting on self-abasement and worship of angels, dwelling on visions, puffed up without cause by a human way of thinking... – Colossians 2:18

In Scripture, encountering an angel, or other heavenly being, was typically a fearful experience:

Then an angel of the Lord appeared to him, standing at the right side of the altar of incense. When Zechariah saw him, he was startled and was gripped with fear. – Luke 1:11-12.

It also exposed the sin of God's people and God's servants:

In the year that King Uzziah died, I saw the Lord seated on a throne, high and exalted, and the train of his robe filled the temple. Above him were seraphs, each with six wings: With two wings they covered their faces, with two they covered their feet, and with two they were flying. And they were calling to one another: "Holy, holy, holy is the LORD Almighty; the whole earth is full of his glory." At the sound of their voices the doorposts and thresholds shook and the temple was filled with smoke. "Woe to me!" I cried. "I am ruined! For I am a

⁶⁷ Thomas a Kempis (ca. 1421), *Imitation of Christ*.

man of unclean lips, and I live among a people of unclean lips, and my eyes have seen the King, the LORD Almighty – Isaiah 6:1-5

A dominant theme of Biblical prophecy is declaring to God's people how God sees their sin, and calling them (us) to repentance.

10 – Jesus did not focus on, or seek out, demonic forces:

"I have given you authority...to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you. However, do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven." – Luke 10:19-20

Jesus' focus was always on God. He dealt with demons directly as and when they manifested themselves.

11 – Jesus refused to be trapped by dialog, arguments and accusations rooted, not in truth, but in spiritual darkness:

When he was accused by the chief priests and the elders, he gave no answer. Then Pilate asked him, "Don't you hear the testimony they are bringing against you?" But Jesus made no reply, not even to a single charge—to the great amazement of the governor. – Matthew 27:12-14

Jesus would not dialog with Satan or his agents. The Kingdom of God is not advanced by dialoging with darkness.

12 – Jesus was fully prepared to walk in surrendered weakness, vulnerability and failure:

Then the governor's soldiers took Jesus into the Praetorium and gathered the whole company of soldiers around him. They stripped him and put a scarlet robe on him, and then twisted together a crown of thorns and set it on his head. They put a staff in his right hand and knelt in front of him and mocked him. "Hail, king of the Jews!" they said. They spit on him, and took the staff and struck him on the head again and again. After they had mocked him, they took off the robe and put his own clothes on him. Then they led him away to crucify him." – Matthew 27:27-31

Jesus' greatest act of spiritual battle was carried out in the hour of his greatest personal weakness and vulnerability. There is nothing here of arrogance or boasting, calling attention to himself or triumphalism.

13 – Jesus was prepared to suffer:

He then began to teach them that the Son of Man must suffer many things and be rejected by the elders, chief priests and teachers of the law, and that he must be killed and after three days rise again... and Peter took him aside and began to rebuke him. – Mark 8:31-32

14 – Jesus was prepared to be misunderstood:

The people stood watching, and the rulers even sneered at him. They said, "He saved others; let him save himself if he is the Christ of God, the Chosen One." The soldiers also came up and mocked him. They offered him wine vinegar and said, "If you are the king of the Jews, save yourself." – Luke 23:35-37

15 – Jesus was prepared for loneliness:

At that time Jesus said to the crowd, "Am I leading a rebellion, that you have come out with swords and clubs to capture me? Every day I sat in the temple courts teaching, and you did not arrest me. But this has all taken place that the writings of the prophets might be fulfilled." Then all the disciples deserted him and fled. – Matthew 26:55-56

16 – Jesus prayed:

After Jesus had spoken these words, he looked up to heaven and said, "Father, the hour has come; glorify your Son so that the Son may glorify you..." - John 17:1

17 - Jesus forgave his enemies:

Jesus said, "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing..." - Luke 23:34a

18 - Jesus loved:

....Having loved his own who were in the world, he now showed them the full extent of his love. - John 13:1

He was not trying to win or to show he was right. He was giving his life to provide a way for humanity to be redeemed from the consequences of our sin.

* * * * *

On the cross Christ won a decisive victory against Satan. But Satan has not yet surrendered. The fact that he continues the battle is proof of the insanity that characterizes evil. Who in his right mind would challenge Almighty God? His final defeat is sure, in the way and time of God's choosing.

The enemy can do nothing against Christ, but he can do much against us. Hence spiritual battle is an essential part of the Christian life. We fight with the weapons our Almighty God has provided for us, following his Christ to the costly victory he purchased with his own blood.

And the devil who had deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet were, and they will be tormented day and night forever and ever. - Revelation 20:10

Article 104: Practicing the Presence of God

By George Miley

This teaching was given at the Antioch Network Gathering in Austin, TX – June, 2009

The Scriptures instruct us to “Pray without ceasing.” Why would anyone want to pray without ceasing? What is praying without ceasing anyway? Even if one were drawn to such a thing, in light of life’s realities, how could it ever be possible?

What is prayer? In its most fundamental form, prayer is coming present to God and remaining there. To pray without ceasing is to live in unbroken awareness of and interaction with God.

In the beginning

We were created for this; it is “natural” to who we truly are. It is eternal life (John 17:3). In the garden, before the fall, our first parents lived in uninterrupted communion with God. They lived continually in the Presence; prayer did not cease.

What Happened?

They went away. So have we! Humans typically experience God as being far off. Reality is that he is right here. We ask, “God, where are you?” God’s question of our first parents was, “Where are you?” (Genesis 3:9) God has not withdrawn. We have.

The effect: Severe and extensive damage has occurred throughout our person. Our lostness, and the lostness of the family and society who formed us, has resulted in pervasive disfiguration and wounding in each component of our being.

Living in continual awareness of God’s Presence, the condition for which we were created, has become unnatural. Living apart from the experience of God’s Presence, which is so damaging to us, has come to feel normal.

Ever since our fall, even a brief awareness of God’s Presence is easily broken and typically continues for long periods of time. We have lost the knowledge of how to be with God, and the power to implement that knowledge should we regain it.

The Answer: Our Part

The human being has an incredible ability to learn things and store that knowledge. Think of the ability to learn a language. Our mother language comes forth from us all day long, automatically and subconsciously. It is stored deeply within.

Much of what we have learned and stored up are habits of death that moment by moment keep us from God. These habits come forth continually, automatically and subconsciously. We have lost the knowledge of how to live in God’s Presence.

We must go through a deep and extensive process of reorientation and transformation. We must learn how – be re-trained – to live continually with God.

Knowledge of how to do this is not remote or inaccessible. We need look no further than the Scriptures, especially the life and teaching of Jesus. In apprenticeship to him, we learn how to be with the Father, and to live in his Presence – continually.

As Jesus and his first apprentices, the apostles, made clear, this re-training will require effort and costly decisions on our part. But through it we become whole people again. We regain the knowledge of how to live in eternal life.

The Answer: God's Part

God's part is to respond to our heart decisions by gracing us with his empowerment. This he does through the person of the Holy Spirit residing and working within us. "God will not do this for us, or to us, but he will indeed do it with us."⁶⁸

Our transformation cannot take place without our decisions, but our decisions alone cannot actualize it. They open the way to God, but they cannot transform. That power resides only with God. Transforming us into the likeness of Christ is his miracle.

Growth in capacity to remain in our Father's Presence will be a process. We will need much patience with ourselves, just as our heavenly Father will have patience with us. We won't always get it right. This is a process for the rest of our lives.

Understandings I Have Found Helpful

I view these three Biblical instructions as being in parallel with each other:

- 1) pray without ceasing,
- 2) abide in me, and
- 3) be filled with the Spirit

Can one pray without ceasing but not abide in Christ? How could one abide in Christ and not be filled with the Spirit? Surely being filled with the Spirit results in abiding in Christ and praying continually.

The ultimate work of the Holy Spirit is the transformation of the person into the likeness of Christ. When Christlikeness has not yet been formed in us, the work of the Spirit is not yet complete in us. – 1 Corinthians 13

Being increasingly transformed into the likeness of Christ is what happens when we live increasingly in God's Presence. Being with him, we become like him.

God does not come to us primarily through our physical senses, although he can come present to them whenever he likes. God belongs to the unseen world. He is always right there with us. We receive this reality by faith and proceed accordingly.

To know how to live continuously in God's Presence is not a goal we reach but a destination toward which we travel. We can never say we have reached it, but we can and do continually experience progress. We increasingly mature.

Practicing God's Presence

In 1930 Frank Laubach, missionary in the Philippines, aged 45, sought to learn how to practice the Presence of Christ. He wrote, "Can I bring the Lord back in my mind flow every few seconds so that God shall always be in my mind?"

⁶⁸ *Renovation of the Heart*, Dallas Willard.

Our minds naturally wander. When we say, "I can't get my mind off *this*," what we mean is, "I can't stop my mind continually returning to *this*." Living in God's Presence involves being proactive to shorten the gaps between the times when our thoughts are on God.

A daily rhythm of prayer: The first Christians continued the Jewish practice of scheduled prayer times during the day. This discipline was continued and deepened in monasticism. Benedict scheduled eight prayer times a day for his 24/7 houses of prayer.

Centering prayer: The more often we pray during the day the more important very short prayers become. What prayer could a working person pray every hour? Every five minutes? Here are three possibilities:

- Three sets of four – Father, I love You (4x). Lord Jesus...Holy Spirit...
- The Jesus Prayer – Lord Jesus Christ, Son of God, have mercy on me, a sinner.
- Pray scripture the Spirit is using in your life at the moment.

Solitude and silence: Learning to pray without ceasing will require us, sooner or later, to come into meaningful relationship with our own soul. What are the issues blocking us from prayer? Solitude and silence make space for the Spirit to give insight.

Compulsivity: A major blockage to praying without ceasing is compulsivity. Compulsivities are illnesses of the soul. Responses in our thoughts, emotions and bodies are triggered without us being able to control them, or even understand them.

Healing: It is through abiding in the Presence of God that healing of the person takes place. Compulsivities weaken, and increasingly disappear, as the wounds of the soul from which they spring and are energized are healed in communion with the Healer.

Transformation of the person: It is also through abiding in the Presence of Christ that we are transformed into his likeness. Thus, the foundational reality we seek to learn in Apprenticeship to Jesus is how to abide in his Presence.

The Components of the Human Person

It is helpful in the process of transformation to become familiar with the components of the human person. This aids greatly in identifying sin that must be brought to the cross, and habits that must be unlearned and replaced with new ones.

My understanding of the components of the human person has come from the words of Jesus in Mark 12:30-31, and from *Renovation of the Heart* by Dallas Willard: heart, soul, mind, strength and social context.

We can pray for the Holy Spirit to fill each of these components:

Heart: Think of the heart as the center of intentionality – the will. Willard calls it, "The executive center of the self." Here life directions, small and large, are set in place and become established. The heart is our motivational center.

Prayer: *Holy Spirit, empower me to love the Lord my God with all my heart. Come and fill my will. My own willpower is completely inadequate, and leads only to failure and despair. Come and empower me to make moment by moment and day by day the decisions that result in a life lived in walking in the ways of the Lord.*

Soul: "What is running your life at any given moment is your soul. Not external circumstances, or your thoughts, or your intentions, or even your feelings.... The soul...correlates, integrates,

and enlivens everything going on in the various dimensions of the self. It is the life-center of the human being. It regulates whatever is occurring in each of those dimensions and how they interact with each other and respond to surrounding events in the overall governance of your life. The soul is 'deep' in the sense of being basic or foundational and also in the sense that it lies almost totally beyond conscious awareness"⁶⁹

Prayer: *Holy Spirit, empower me to love the Lord my God with all my soul. Come and fill my soul. Teach me how to cooperate with You so that my soul will be in order under God my Creator. Heal my soul. Transform my soul to be like Jesus.*

Mind: It is helpful to think of the mind as composed of both thoughts and emotions. We have two kinds of thoughts: *analytical thoughts* and *imaginative/intuitive thoughts*.

Analytical thoughts help us solve practical problems. They are of great value when used as God meant. Modern man has become dominated by analytical thinking. This is a major area of the wounding of our souls.

Prayer: *Holy Spirit, empower me to love the Lord my God with all my mind. Come and fill my thoughts. May I think only that which is holy, and true, and loving and glorifying to God.*

Imaginative/intuitive thoughts are just as crucial to our well-being as analytical thoughts. Through them we receive insight and revelation from God. They release our creativity. Yet through them can come impulses that are destructive to our souls.

Prayer: *Holy Spirit, come and fill my imagination. May I be able to receive from You insight and revelation. Release creativity from within me for your glory. Fill my imaginative thoughts that my soul may be protected from all that is damaging to it.*

Emotions are wonderful. God has emotions! Our emotions energize us. Healthy emotions energize us in productive, Godly directions. Wounded emotions energize us in directions that further wound us and others.

Prayer: *Holy Spirit, come and fill my emotions. May I experience the glory of what it is to be human, created in the image of God. I ask also that You will fill my wounded emotions. So often, energized out of my wounded emotions, I have done things and said things that have dishonored You, dishonored others and dishonored myself. I have further wounded others and myself. Lord Jesus, I bring my sins to Your cross. Holy Spirit, come with your healing Presence and fill and heal my wounded emotions.*

Strength: The seat of our strength is our body. Our body is the temple of the Holy Spirit. The various components of our being are interrelated. The more our hearts, souls and minds become healthy the more this health is seen and felt in our bodies. The Holy Spirit wants to renew our strength.

Prayer: *Holy Spirit, empower me to love the Lord my God with all my strength. Come and fill my body with your healing Presence. (Then we can ask the Holy Spirit to fill different parts of our body that need the healing of God at this moment.)*

Our neighbor: Our social context: Created in the image of the Triune God, we are social beings. A core aspect of our fallenness is that our relational context has been damaged, and without God's help we don't know how to repair it. The instruction to love our neighbor as ourselves is not just for our neighbor's benefit, but for ours also.

⁶⁹ *Renovation of the Heart*, Dallas Willard.

Prayer: *Holy Spirit, empower me to love my neighbor as myself. Come and fill my social context and interactions today. (Specifically bring to the Holy Spirit the situations into which we will enter today.)*

Article 105: The Role of Jewish Believers in Reconciliation among Followers of Jesus

By George Miley

This teaching was given at the Antioch Network Gathering in Austin, TX – June, 2009

I am thankful for the insights contained in the paper, "TJCII and the Unity of the Church", given during the Toward Jerusalem Council II international summit held in Gnadental, Germany, September, 2008.

Introduction

- 1 – Jesus prayed that all of his followers would be one. It is inconceivable that the Father will not answer this prayer.
- 2 – Spiritual unity is bestowed by the Holy Spirit upon all followers of Christ.
- 3 – Satan hates this unity. It is central to his ultimate defeat. The spiritual darkness aggressively and continually attacks the unity of Christians.
- 4 – Throughout the Christian centuries, sins have been committed against the unity of the Church. The effects of these sins are with us today, embedded in collective memory, in histories and cultures of nations and in Christian traditions.
- 5 – In preparation for Christ's return, the Spirit is restoring spiritual unity to all the expressions of the Church. This is costly for all parties. It requires a process of reconciliation that deals Biblically with past sins and their present effects.
- 6 – In this process of reconciliation among all Christians, the Messianic Jewish witness has a crucial role to play.

Christ's Fractured Body: A Brief Historical Overview

- 1 – **The catholic period.** Looking at the most basic outline of *western* church history, we first encounter what is known as the catholic (universal) period.
- 2 – **Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox.** Competition between Rome and Constantinople increased tensions within the Church. In 1054 the break between Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox became official.
- 3 – **The Protestant Reformation.** In the 16th century the Protestant Reformation initiated a period in which the number of denominations began to multiply. That process continues. There are now reported to be 38,000.
- 4 – **The free churches.** Free churches began to appear with the Radical Reformation of the 16th century (Anabaptists, etc.), followed by 17th century movements in Britain. The multiplication of free churches continues today.
- 5 – Sins against the unity of the Church are not primarily the multiplying of groups. They are heart attitudes like pride and judgmentalism that Christians have used to justify treating each other with contempt and even violence.

The Jewish Witness to Yeshua

- 1 – One Christian tradition predates all the above. Jesus was Jewish. The original community of his followers was Jewish. It was recognized as belonging to the Jewish community both by the synagogue and the Roman authorities.
- 2 – At the first Church Council of Jerusalem (Acts 15) Jewish apostles and elders welcomed Gentiles into the body of Messiah without requiring them to convert to Judaism. There would be a Jewish witness and a Gentile witness.
- 3 – Sometime around 85-90 A.D. the rabbis at Yavneh decided that Jewish believers in Yeshua should be excluded from the synagogue. The Messianic Jewish community was no longer accepted as being part of Israel.
- 4 – Between the 2nd and 4th centuries the Church, now overwhelmingly gentile, first marginalized and then excluded Jewish believers. Church rules required Messianic Jews to cease Jewish practices and renounce Jewish identity.
- 5 – The Gentile Church adopted what is known as “replacement theology.” This teaches that, because of Israel’s unfaithfulness, God has replaced Israel with the Church in his covenant promises.
- 6 – This teaching opened the way for Jews being treated with contempt (anti-Semitism) by Christians for centuries. Three examples will suffice:
 - In 1095-6 Crusaders en route to, and in, the Holy Land robbed, attacked and killed Jews in Cologne, Trier, Speyer, Worms, Mainz and finally Jerusalem.
 - In 1478 the Spanish Inquisition began to root out baptized Jews who still practiced Judaism. In 1492 Spain expelled Jews who did not convert.
 - In 1933 Nazis came to power in Germany. German Lutheran leaders have acknowledged the role Luther’s contempt for Jews had in Nazi ideology.
- 7 – For the first time in centuries, today we have a growing Messianic Jewish witness among us worldwide. Beginning in the 19th century, by 2003 it included a total of 400 Messianic synagogues, and up to 250,000 believers in the US.
- 8 – It is being increasingly recognized that the presence of a Messianic witness to Yeshua has far-reaching eschatological implications.

The Jewish Witness and the Process of Reconciliation

- 1 – The presence of the Messianic Jewish partner radically changes the dynamics of interaction between separated Christian churches and believers.
- 2 – In the presence of the Jewish witness to Yeshua, both the historic Christian churches and the newer Evangelical revival currents can recognize the “elder brother” who precedes us all and whom all should honor.
- 3 – This situation humbles the Gentile believers and facilitates a common confession of sin relative to the Jewish people and Jewish believers in Yeshua.
- 4 – Every teaching that asserts that God has abandoned his covenant with Israel, and every teaching that separates Jesus from his own people, is inherently divisive.
 - It makes the new order dependent on God breaking his covenant. This teaching undermines stability in the new covenant order.

- It introduces a spirit of judgmentalism: new claimants to be the “authentic church” replace those judged to be rebellious and apostate.

5 – Replacement theology “replaces” the “one new man” model of Church unity (Eph. 2:12-3:6) with a “universal” conciliar Church of the nations. Your author advocates a return to the “one new man” model, first actualized in Antioch. (Acts 11: 19-26)

6 – The breach between her Messianic and Gentile expressions was the initial rupture in the Body of Messiah. A Biblical process of reconciliation between them can point the way for reconciliation among Gentile churches.

7 – As divided Gentile believers discover their common ingrafting into the Messiah who is totally identified with his people Israel, they discover the real ground for the unity of the Church as expressed in Ephesians.

The Process of Reconciliation

How reconciliation is reached between groups of people, i.e., ethnic/national groups or Christian traditions, is not remote or mysterious. We learn it by becoming apprentices to Jeshua in kingdom living:

1 – We invite Jesus into our midst. We submit to him and study his teaching. He spoke the most reliable information ever as to how life can be lived successfully. Only he can heal the deep, far-reaching wounds of history.

2 – We listen compassionately to each other’s stories. We seek to “hear” accurately how others have been hurt by us, or by members of our group.

3 – We confess the truth. We own the wrongs we, or members of our group, have committed. We bring our sins to the cross. The cross of Jesus can redeem them. As appropriate, we confess our sins to those we have wronged.

4 – We seek to make restitution where possible. We desire to demonstrate true repentance in appropriate, tangible and practical ways.

5 – We look for appropriate opportunities to request forgiveness. Confession and heart repentance open the way for forgiveness. But we never demand to be forgiven. This decision rests with those who have been wronged.

6 – We extend forgiveness. Perhaps we are the ones who have been wronged. We learn from Jesus how to leave retribution with God. Retaliation is his responsibility, not ours.

7 – We come together in deep love. God’s Kingdom – his rule – becomes visible. Those who witness this know: “Only God could have done this!”

The Return of Messiah

1 – The work of the Spirit in bringing together in unity all the Christian streams is an indication of his work of preparing for the return of Christ in glory.

2 – As the Spirit sets the stage for the return of Messiah, the Jewish people play a foundational role. Yeshua will return as their Messiah. His feet shall stand on the Mount of Olives before Jerusalem – Zechariah 14:4

3 – Messianic Jews also have been given by God a unique role in the proclamation of the gospel among all nations – the Gentiles:

- "... For out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem." – Micah 4:2
- "Thus says the LORD of hosts: In those days ten men from the nations of every tongue shall take hold of the robe of a Jew, saying, 'Let us go with you, for we have heard that God is with you.'" – Zechariah 8:23
- The Holy Spirit decreed that the original mission to the Gentiles would be launched from Antioch. His chosen messengers were Jewish. – Acts 13:1-3

I ask, then, has God rejected his people? By no means!... Lest you be wise in your own conceits, I want you to understand this mystery brothers: a partial hardening has come upon Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in. And in this way all Israel will be saved... For the gifts and the calling of God are irrevocable.... Oh, the depth of the riches and wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are his judgments and how inscrutable his ways!... For from him and through him and to him are all things. To him be glory forever. Amen. – Romans 11:1, 25-26, 29, 33, 36

Article 106: Development of a Work of God: Principles

This teaching was given to the Antioch Network Apprenticeship to Jesus Community in Phoenix, AZ – August, 2009

- 1 – **God's Call:** Every work of God is initiated by God, not by man – Exodus 3:4-10
 - That which is of human origin will not be spiritually fruitful: it will be an Ishmael – Genesis 17:17-18
 - Or it will go through deep purification and reorientation.
- 2 – **God's Leader:** God's call comes to one who is increasingly recognized to be God's leader.
 - This person will have strengths
 - But also flaws.
 - The call will become for him or her a cross – 2 Corinthians 4:7-12
- 3 – **Community.**
 - A multi-gifted team gathers around the leader – God's provision for the implementation of the calling – 1 Corinthians 12:14
 - The leader is united with leaders outside the work – God's provision for the leader's need for counsel and covering – Galatians 2:1-2
- 4 – **Insignificant beginnings** – Hebrews 11:11-12
- 5 – **Growth.** Because there is life, there is growth.
 - At first it is largely unseen. It is happening in people – Galatians 1:15-17
 - As individuals mature, growth assumes visible forms – Acts 14:26-27
- 6 – **Weakness.** As the work develops, weaknesses increasingly appear.
 - Leaders and people are limited – 2 Timothy 1:15; 4:9-13
 - Character has not yet matured into Christlikeness – Philippians 3:8, 10
 - The cross becomes increasingly incarnated in the community's DNA.
 - Faith becomes the settled response – 2 Corinthians 11:23-30
- 7 – **Spiritual opposition:** the more fruitful the work, the more evil will oppose.
 - Attacks from without – Acts 20:29
 - Attacks from within – Acts 20:30
- 8 – **Increasing fruit:** in God's ways and timing.
 - The work remains vulnerable – fragile – 2 Timothy 4:14-18
 - That no flesh may glory – 2 Corinthians 12:7-10

Article 107: Spiritual Protection of a Work of God: Principles

By George Miley

This teaching was given to the Antioch Network Apprenticeship to Jesus Community in Phoenix, AZ – August, 2009

1 – **Spiritual defeat does not come through mistakes in strategy or tactics.** God is not hindered by mistakes. When we respond to them correctly, he makes them occasions for growth. *God's work is damaged by sin.*

2 – **We are to understand the process by which God transforms the inner person.** It matures us increasingly to become the kind of people for whom sin is unattractive. – Galatians 4:19

Spiritual formation in Christ is:

1. *Renovation of the Heart* by Dallas Willard
2. **Orderly.** God can triumph in disorder, but that is not his choice.
 - *Clearly laid out in the Bible, especially the words/person of Jesus.*
 - *Leaving out ways of heavy labor, especially "religious" ones.*
 - *Stepping into the yoke of training with Jesus.*
 - *A way of gentleness and lowliness.*
 - *A way of soul rest.*
 - *Small steps that quietly lead to inner transformation.*
 - *A Spirit-driven process.*
 - *Of forming the inner world of the person.*
 - *So that it becomes like the inner world of Christ.*
 - *The outer life matures into a natural expression of Jesus' character.*
- 3 – **We come into the Trinitarian Presence** and remain there. Psalm 84:1-2, 10; Psalm 1:2-3
 - "In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit. Amen."
 - In God's Presence we are cleansed, healed, transformed and empowered.
 - We have been formed in a world of wrongness. We must be re-formed.
 - Priorities and schedules must be radically rearranged to create space for the pursuit of God. – Mark 1:16-18
 - We must become familiar with and at home in solitude. – 1 Kings 17:1-6
 - Solitude creates space for getting to know our own soul.
 - The busyness of modern life is a compulsive-addictive response to lack of self-acceptance.
 - The closer we live to God the more we will encounter spiritual powers of darkness. We always respond only from the Presence. – 2 Timothy 2:3-7

- We must know how to live in God's Presence. Leaders must show the way.

4 – **We walk the way of the cross.** – Matthew 16:24-25

- The way of the cross positions us inwardly to come into God's Presence.
- The foundational cause of all lostness on earth is human self-will.
- Jesus does not repair the old life; he gives us a new life. – John 3:3
- The cross, correctly understood, is attractive beyond description. Galatians 6:14-15

Amy Carmichael, 1867-1951, spent 55 years in India rescuing children from lives of temple prostitution. Intimacy with Christ forged within her the Christlike character that sustained the lifelong calling God had entrusted to her. Here is her prayer:

From prayer that asks that I should be Sheltered from winds that beat on Thee, From fearing when I should aspire, From faltering when I should climb higher, From silken self, O Captain, free Thy soldier who would follow Thee.	Give me the love that leads the way, The faith that nothing can dismay, The hope no disappointments tire, The passion that will burn like fire; Let me not sink to be a clod: Make me Thy fuel, Flame of God.
--	--

From subtle love of softening things,
From easy choices, weakenings,
(Not thus are spirits fortified,
Not this way went the Crucified),
From all that dims Thy Calvary,
O Lamb of God, deliver me.

5 – **We put off the old man – Colossians 3:5-8**

- Selfish ambition – James 3:13-18
- Evil speaking – James 3:5-10
- Sexual sin – Colossians 3:5
- Disunity – Ephesians 4:2-3

6 – **We put on the new man** – Colossians 3:9ff

- Humility
- Patience
- Forgiveness
- Love
- Christlikeness – Philippians 3:10-14

7 – **As we progressively mature into the likeness of Christ, we gain wisdom.** Godly wisdom provides the foundation upon which we develop the strategy and tactics of the work. – Proverbs 4:7-9

Article 108: Principles for Financial Well-Being To the Antioch Network staff

By George Miley

This teaching was given to the Antioch Network staff through these notes and a phone meeting in October, 2009. It is intended to be an overview of biblical principles and their real-life application, to be personal and pastoral, but in no way is intended to offer legal or financial advice.

Antioch Network is an international fellowship of Christians preparing the way for the Lord. The fellowship is much larger than the staff, whose purpose is to serve the fellowship in a common calling. This teaching, initially for a restricted audience, is included here by request from others who have found it more broadly helpful.

Dear Friends and Co-laborers in the Purposes of God,

The energy for this study comes from a deep awareness that God has called us together into a fellowship involving mutual commitment. Therefore those of us to whom leadership has been entrusted are responsible to lead godly and well. As the Lord is graciously joining to us a growing number of young adults, we feel a sacred responsibility concerning the implications of how we are asking you and your families to live out your ministry calling.

Especially relevant here are the financial consequences of serving on our staff. We are asking you to take personal responsibility, before God, for your financial well-being, and that of your family and ministry. We are well aware that what people understand today by "raising support" has associated ideas that call for careful Biblical analysis and Godly wisdom. What are we actually asking you to do? What will be the long-term consequences for you and your families? Where will you be financially 10, 20, 50 years from now? What commitments are we to have to each other?

In 1966 – over 40 years ago – I left graduate theological studies and went to live in the villages of India. Since then I have had no guaranteed income. In contemporary terminology I have "raised support." But for the first 20 years of my missionary career, I and my coworkers walked in the conviction to ask no man for money, but only to pray and trust God alone for his provision. My understandings in this area have gone through some adjustments since then, but I would not trade the first-hand experiences of God and his supply during those years for anything. They formed me in my depths. Our Father supplied for Hanna and me everything we needed, and in the process we watched him provide two ocean-going ships for world evangelization, with their international crews. Their purchase prices and operating expenses were "raised," initially and throughout the years, only by prayer.

But financial well-being involves more than just income. We will eventually be faced with such questions as, "How will I respond when I unexpectedly lose supporters?" (Which happens regularly – "fund-raising" is a 12-month a year activity.) "What will I do in the event of a serious accident or sickness?" "What kind of education is best for my children and how will the Lord provide?" "How do I plan for retirement?"

(Note: You may say, "I am not planning to retire." But due to the decline of our physical capacities with aging, that decision may not be left to us.)

In these latter years of my life in Christian service, I ask myself, "What can I share in the area of finances with those belonging to the generations who come after me, and serve together with me?" The question feels like a sacred one.

Principles That Have Guided My Ministry Life Financially

1 – **God is our Provider.** *We keep our eyes on him alone.* When anxious thoughts and emotions shift our focus, we are off-target.

Matthew 6:31-35 – “So do not worry, saying, ‘What shall we eat?’ or ‘What shall we drink?’ or ‘What shall we wear?’ For the pagans run after all these things, and your heavenly Father knows that you need them. But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness and all these things will be given to you as well. Therefore do not worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will worry about itself. Each day has enough trouble of its own.”

2 – **God provides all our needs.** *Money is only one of them.* Wisdom is another, and more valuable. Christlikeness, for which wisdom is required, is of highest value. God may withhold finances, for a season, in order to meet a more important need, of which we may be (largely) unaware. When we experience financial need, an appropriate prayer is, “Father, what do you want to say to me/us through these circumstances?”

Proverbs 3:13-16 – Blessed is the man who finds wisdom, the man who gains understanding, for she is more profitable than silver and yields better returns than gold. She is more precious than rubies; nothing you desire can compare with her. Long life is in her right hand; in her left hand are riches and honor.

3 – **God is not poor.** *He is not calling us to a poverty mind-set.* Our Heavenly Father owns it all, and it is his heart to give generously to his children. As we follow all of his ways, in his way and time, he will give us the wisdom to create the level of wealth he wants us to have.

Note: A poverty mind-set can be rooted in unhealed hurt and prideful reaction.

Note: The Biblical meaning of “wealth” has some essential differences from what is typically understood by “wealth” in contemporary society.

Deuteronomy 8:6-9 – Observe the commands of the LORD your God, walking in his ways and revering him. For the LORD your God is bringing you into a good land—a land with streams and pools of water, with springs flowing in the valleys and hills; a land with wheat and barley, vines and fig trees, pomegranates, olive oil and honey; a land where bread will not be scarce and you will lack nothing; a land where the rocks are iron and you can dig copper out of the hills.

4 – **Humility is a prerequisite for being entrusted with Godly wealth.** *Humility is cultivated by continual, intentional, heart-felt thanksgiving.* Money without humility ultimately harms the soul and loosens our grasp on eternal life (experiencing life in God’s kingdom now). If this condition continues, God will apply correction. Cultivating humility of heart opens the way for God to be free to trust us with more.

Deuteronomy 8:10-14 – When you have eaten and are satisfied, praise the LORD your God for the good land he has given you. Be careful that you do not forget the LORD your God, failing to observe his commands, his laws and his decrees that I am giving you this day. Otherwise, when you eat and are satisfied, when you build fine houses and settle down, and when your herds and flocks grow large and your silver and gold increase and all you have is multiplied, then your heart will become proud and you will forget the LORD your God, who brought you out of Egypt, out of the land of slavery.

Proverbs 22:4 – Humility and the fear of the LORD bring wealth and honor and life.

5 – **Giving generously is being like God.** It is also how we are progressively formed not to love money; we give it away!

Luke 21:1-4 – As he looked up, Jesus saw the rich putting their gifts into the temple treasury. He also saw a poor widow put in two very small copper coins. “I tell you the truth,”

he said, "this poor widow has put in more than all the others. All these people gave their gifts out of their wealth; but she out of her poverty put in all she had to live on."

6 – Living responsibly with respect to money is not opposed to faith. *Pride and self-reliance are opposed to faith.* Both wisdom and faith are Godly and operate seamlessly together. A view of faith that fosters irresponsibility is not Biblical. It is possible to misunderstand "living by faith" in ways that result in "chasing fantasies."

Proverbs 28:19 – He who works his land will have abundant food, but the one who chases fantasies will have his fill of poverty.

Note: Financial responsibility involves being well-informed. Especially for leaders it might be very wise to take a course on accounting. The matter of investing requires continual learning.

Proverbs 22:29 – Do you see a man skilled in his work? He will serve before kings; he will not serve before obscure men.

7 – In all our financial activities we are to conduct ourselves with complete integrity. God will not cooperate with dishonest dealings. We go out of our way to establish and protect a good name.

Proverbs 11:1 – The LORD abhors dishonest scales, but accurate weights are his delight.

Proverbs 22:1 – A good name is more desirable than great riches; to be esteemed is better than silver and gold.

8 – There are advantages in wealth. *It increases our ability to give, minister, and provide for our families.*

Proverbs 13:22 – A good man leaves an inheritance for his children's children....

There are also dangers in wealth. It can lead to pride, self-reliance, greed, hardness of heart and sensual carnality.

Revelation 3:17-18 – "You say, 'I am rich; I have acquired wealth and do not need a thing.' But you do not realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind and naked. I counsel you to buy from me gold refined in the fire, so you can become rich; and white clothes to wear, so you can cover your shameful nakedness; and salve to put on your eyes, so you can see."

9 – There are dangers in poverty. It can lead to unhealthy levels of stress, result in making unwise financial decisions under duress, and tempt us to dishonest acts. The sins to which the rich are susceptible are also to be found among the poor. Being poor is no guarantee of Godliness.

Proverbs 30:8-9 – Keep falsehood and lies far from me; give me neither poverty nor riches, but give me only my daily bread. Otherwise, I may have too much and disown you and say, 'Who is the LORD?' Or I may become poor and steal, and so dishonor the name of my God.

10 – Differentiate between income and investment. Income is to 1) meet current needs and, in God's grace and will, 2) provide something for investment.

Proverbs 31:10, 16, 18, 20-21, 24, 31 – A wife of noble character who can find? She is worth far more than rubies.... She considers a field and buys it; out of her earnings she plants a vineyard.... She sees that her trading is profitable, and her lamp does not go out at night.... She opens her arms to the poor and extends her hands to the needy.... When it snows, she has no fear for her household; for all of them are clothed in scarlet.... She makes linen garments and sells them, and supplies the merchants with sashes.... Give her the reward she has earned, and let her works bring her praise at the city gate.

Principles in Establishing Income: "Raising Support"

1 – **We center ourselves in God.** He alone is our Provider.

2 – **We establish daily rhythms of prayer.** "Father, give us this day our daily bread. How do you want to provide? What responsible acts do you want me to take?"

3 – **We give generously.** Nothing forms in us Godly attitudes about money like prayerfully, generously giving it away. We use a tenth as a starting point.

Proverbs 3:9-10 – Honor the LORD with your wealth, with the firstfruits of all your crops; then your barns will be filled to overflowing, and your vats will brim over with new wine.

4 – **We budget.** Budgeting is an act of responsibility. It helps us tell ourselves the truth about what Christian ministry really costs. It provides the basis for transparency and accountability.

Note: Be sure to include everything: taxes, insurance, medical, ministry expenses, relaxation, administrative assessment, and some to invest. Review and agree on the budget with your spouse. Listen carefully and honor areas that are important to her/him. Present your budget for approval by those to whom you are responsible.

5 – **We regularly update and correlate giving with budget.** Is giving running above or below budget? By what percentage? A fairly simple spreadsheet will do all the calculations for us. Doing this on a weekly basis is not too often.

Note: Periodically, those who know we are "raising support" will ask a question like, "How are your finances going?" It is crucial to have a ready, accurate answer. If we ramble and hedge, it will appear as if the matter is not that important to us. If it is not that important to us, it won't be that important to the prospective donor. Remember, every potential donor is receiving other requests for financial support regularly.

6 – **We establish regular ministry updates.** This is an act of responsibility, giving a way to stay in contact with those who pray, and with donors and potential donors. We ask people if they would like to receive updates before just adding them. This gives them a chance to declare an interest in our ministry. "Raising support" is an ongoing process.

Note: We grow the list over time. We make the updates as short, interesting and relevant as we can. Don't use the updates primarily to appeal for finances, but add a line at the bottom informing people that your ministry is made possible through the financial contributions of individuals and churches. Make it very clear how they can send their gifts if they want to participate with you. End with "Thank you!"

7 – **We thank donors.** A wonderful rule of thumb is, "Thank before you bank." A short email note is often enough. Monthly donors don't have to be thanked each month, but stay current with them.

8 – **We gradually increase the circle of people with whom we can discuss money naturally.** People need to understand how we operate. How do we get our money for salary and ministry? Look for natural ways to communicate without pressure. At times it might be right to ask them if you may share with them.

9 – **We create different ways people can give.** Different donors are motivated in different ways. Some just love and believe in us and want to give to us monthly regardless of what we are doing. Others are cautious about a monthly commitment, but can relate to a one-time gift to a specific project. Are there expenses that are better communicated as a project than part of a regular budget?

10 – **We connect with the fact that there are people who can write four, five, even six figure checks.** Can you see someone giving you \$10,000? It might come from a person you least expected. People sell houses, receive inheritances, or just have more money than we think.

Here is where a poverty mind-set works against God's work being adequately funded. People need to be able to see that we are living responsibly in the area of finances.

Note: In setting aside a small amount every month to invest (perhaps 10%?) don't get trapped in the idea that people "living on the gifts of God's people" should not do such things. A good number of potential donors will be more motivated to give if they know you are approaching life with this kind of responsibility. Pastors also "live on the gifts of God's people" and church boards regularly pay them enough for them to plan for the future. Approval of your budget by Antioch Network leadership legitimizes this.

Principles in Investing: Co-operating with God to

- 1) Increase Our Ability to Give,
- 2) Develop Resources to Minister, and
- 3) Provide for the Future

(**Note:** Nothing here should be understood as giving advice on specific investments. This is only an overview of principles and my own understanding of Biblical teaching.)

1 – **We center ourselves in God.** He alone is our Provider.

2 – **We establish daily rhythms of prayer.** "Father, give us this day our daily bread. How do you want to provide? What responsible acts do you want me to take?"

3 – **We give generously.** Nothing forms in us Godly attitudes about money like prayerfully, generously giving it away. We use a tenth as a starting point.

Proverbs 11:24-25 – One man gives freely, yet gains even more; another withholds unduly, but comes to poverty. A generous man will prosper; he who refreshes others will himself be refreshed.

4 – **We keep expenses less than income.** If I had to choose only one financial principle for a life of financial health, this would be it => **Live below your means.**

Note: If we are unsure whether or not we can afford something, perhaps we can't. A dollar consumed is a dollar gone. A dollar saved is a dollar that can be invested, with the potential of becoming two dollars – or more. This reality establishes within us a preference not to consume, but to save so that we can invest.

Note: Sam Walton, founder of Walmart, drove an old pick-up truck even after he was very wealthy. Warren Buffett, perhaps the most successful investor of all time and one of the wealthiest people in the world, still lives in a modest house. A foundational principle in successful business and investing: diligence in controlling expenses.

5 – **We don't pay interest; we earn interest.** Debt is a major cause of people coming into financial difficulty. It is widely promoted in society today. We develop sales-resistance to debt – we just say "no." Taking on debt is making a commitment as to what we will do in the future. But we do not know the future. Unless we have assets to back the loan, we are making a future promise that is not fully in our power to deliver.

Proverbs 22:7 – The rich rule over the poor, and the borrower is servant to the lender.

Note: We are diligent to pay credit card bills completely every month. Thus they become investment tools! They cost only whatever the annual fee is, and we can earn benefits like free air tickets. The first month we can't pay our bill in full, we take drastic steps.

Note: We consider only buying a car we can pay cash for. We put aside money each month in advance for the next car we know we will ultimately have to buy. Thus we are earning interest

rather than paying interest on a car loan. The cheapest car we can drive is the one we are now driving.

Note: By contrast, a home mortgage may well be a good investment, as long as we are wise and careful. We work to get our mortgage payment close to what we would otherwise pay for rent. That way we are building equity. The loan is backed by the house's asset value, which over the long run is very likely to appreciate. The interest we pay can be deducted from our gross income for tax purposes. It is wise to maintain equity in our home (consider starting with 20%). But be careful: Over the short to medium term our home's market value, like any other asset, can fluctuate. What will we do if we must sell our house earlier than planned? We need a plan.

Note: We don't sign as security for someone else, or lend them money. This is taking responsibility for someone else's decisions, and coming in between them and God, who is their Provider. What does he want to do through their need? How does he want to provide? Is he in the process of giving them something more valuable than money? We can pray for them. If we really want to help, will God lead us to give them the money?

Proverbs 11:15 – He who puts up security for another will surely suffer, but whoever refuses to strike hands in pledge is safe.

6 – **We begin to take responsible action to prepare for the future.**

Proverbs 6:6-8 – Go to the ant, you sluggard; consider its ways and be wise! It has no commander, no overseer or ruler, yet it stores its provisions in summer and gathers its food at harvest.

Matthew 10:9-10 – "Do not take along any gold or silver or copper in your belts; take no bag for the journey, or extra tunic, or sandals or a staff; for the worker is worth his keep."

But also:

Luke 22:35-36 – Then Jesus asked them, "When I sent you without purse, bag or sandals, did you lack anything?" "Nothing," they answered. He said to them, "But now if you have a purse, take it, and also a bag; and if you don't have a sword, sell your cloak and buy one."

Note: It is not too early for people in their twenties to begin preparing for emergencies, children's education, retirement, etc. If you have never done an exercise on the power of compounding, calculate what would happen if, say at age 25, you would put \$10 each month into savings. At, say, 3% interest, how much money would you have at age 65? Over time you will probably be able to earn higher interest in a money market account or government bonds. But remember, inflation will be eroding the value of your savings. What would you have if you put \$100 into savings each month at 5% interest? The earlier you begin saving, the less you need to set aside!

7 – **We establish a cash buffer.** "Raising support" is akin to working as a salesman in that income will significantly fluctuate. At any time we can receive an unexpectedly large gift, or we can lose one or more supporters. A buffer of three months' income is a good rule of thumb. Let's do all we can to protect our family and ministry from "crises."

Proverbs 27:1 – Do not boast about tomorrow, for you do not know what a day may bring forth.

8 – **We prayerfully consider if other investments, in addition to cash, are right for us.** *We only invest in what we understand well.* We get in touch with our tolerance for risk, and that of our spouse. We guard against a volatility level in investing that could cause anxiety and trigger unwise decisions. We enter a period of careful research. We study books, magazines and daily financial news. When we are ready, we make an initial, small investment. We watch, study, wait and gain further perspective and experience. Good investing is akin to good wine production

– an art that takes lots of experience and patience. If all this seems to be too much work, better to stay in cash.

Matthew 25:20-21 – “The man who had received the five talents brought the other five. ‘Master,’ he said, ‘you entrusted me with five talents. See, I have gained five more.’ His master replied, ‘Well done, good and faithful servant! You have been faithful with a few things; I will put you in charge of many things. Come and share your master’s happiness!’”

James 4:13-16 – Now listen, you who say, “Today or tomorrow we will go to this or that city, spend a year there, carry on business and make money.” Why, you do not know what will happen tomorrow. What is your life? You are a mist that appears for a little while and then vanishes. Instead, you ought to say, “If it is the Lord’s will, we will live and do this or that.” As it is, you boast and brag. All such boasting is evil.

Note: We are very careful about who we allow to give us investment advice. Some who present themselves as investment advisors are little more than sales people. If they were really successful investors they would not be out trying to sell us something! We never act on a rumor or “inside tip.” We are informed by a broad range of sources.

Proverbs 11:14 – ...many advisors make victory sure.

Note: We never borrow money for the purpose of investing.

Note: Hanna and I returned to the US in 1985. After 20 years in Christian ministry I was 45 years old and had nothing; our net worth was \$0. I decided I wanted to invest in stocks. We had just conducted several meetings, and had \$1,000 in cash from gifts. We used the \$1,000 to buy three stocks: an airline, a railroad and a consumer products company. The airline and railroad did nothing. The consumer products company became the object of a take-over, and the stock doubled. I was learning.

Note: Starting a business typically requires substantial investment of money, time, energy and know-how before it becomes established. New businesses don’t produce cash; they require cash. The decision to start a business needs thorough preparation: prayer, counsel from successful business people, capital and a good business plan. To start a business for the purpose of funding ministry, think “team.”

9 – **We recognize that wealth is developed little by little.** We do not “buy in” to promises of quick and easy gain – they represent “chasing fantasies.” We are in this for the long-haul.

Proverbs 13:11 – Dishonest money dwindles away, but he who gathers money little by little makes it grow.

Proverbs 21:5 – The plans of the diligent lead to profit as surely as haste leads to poverty.

Note: True investing and gambling are very different. The odds of winning, say, the lottery, are infinitesimally small. No good investor would be attracted to them. Investing involves in-depth knowledge of the asset class in which you are investing: a studied analysis of overall national and international economic conditions affecting the asset, clear consideration of the risk/reward potential, and taking wise steps to minimize risk.

10 – **We pay attention to tax implications.** Obviously, we want to pay every penny of tax we owe, while avoiding what we don’t owe. Consider having a tax professional do your yearly return – it could be one of the best investments you make in terms of the tax he/she might save you. Pay attention to housing allowance, itemization of such things as medical expenses, and retirement vehicles like IRAs. The value of filing as self-employed is that this enables you to open also a SEP IRA.

We give all the glory and credit to God for our financial well-being.

We thank him daily!

Deuteronomy 8:17-18 – You may say to yourself, "My power and the strength of my hands have produced this wealth for me. But remember the LORD your God, for it is he who gives you the ability to produce wealth, and so confirms his covenant, which he swore to your forefathers, as it is today

Article 109: Inner Healing

By George Miley

This teaching was prepared for the Retreat for Spiritual Formation held in Austin, TX, in July, 2010.

Inner wounding occurs as a result of sin:

- the sin we commit
- the sin that is committed against us
- the sin with which we are surrounded in a world of wrongness

Inner wounding blocks our maturing into wholeness. In the areas where we are unhealed, we are trapped in immaturity and dysfunction.

Christ died on the cross to redeem sin, not just forgive it. Certainly, forgiveness is crucial, but it is only the beginning of a process. Forgiveness restores our relationship with God. In life with God (practicing the Presence) full redemption can occur.

There are three main areas of our wounding⁷⁰

- Inability/unwillingness to accept ourselves
- Inability/unwillingness to forgive others
- Inability/unwillingness to receive forgiveness

We learn to accept ourselves by trusting God's love expressed in the unique ways in which he has made us, led us and called us. We do not compare ourselves with others. He specifically told us not to do that. We learn to honor the earthly parents God chose for us, and to forgive them for ways in which they may have wronged us.

We learn to forgive by not requiring those who have wronged us to suffer at our hand. We leave pay back to God. Judgments regarding retaliation are his prerogative, not ours. We learn to pray that God will have mercy on our enemies.

We learn to receive forgiveness by allowing God to love us unconditionally. Our profound need to be loved can only be fully met by him. We will never know the love of God until we can trust the God of love.

We learn how to do these things, and receive the power to do them, through apprenticeship to Jesus. Apprenticeship to Jesus is the path to healing, wholeness, maturity and full redemption.

The most basic "formula" for our healing: We come into God's Presence, and remain there, listening for the healing word he is always ready to speak, poised to obey. Healing takes place as we learn to live in the Presence of God: Father, Son and Holy Spirit.

I cannot make myself holy on my own. But I can learn how to obey.

Two foundational things to learn:

⁷⁰ From *Restoring the Christian Soul* by Leanne Payne.

- How to come into God's Presence and remain there throughout the day.
- How to hear God for ourselves, and then obey.

Sin is redeemed as it is brought to Christ's cross. It is not enough to confess sin, or even to repent. These are crucial. But the process is only brought to redemptive conclusion as we bring each sin of which we are aware to the cross. His cross has the power to remove our sin's guilt and redeem its effects.

No apprentice of Jesus is a victim. Our Heavenly Father is all-powerful, all-compassionate, and always there for us. We step out of the victim role when we take responsibility for our own healing under God. He shows us how, and empowers us to do so. To remain a victim is to be trapped in childhood – to become an orphan.

Inner healing requires deep insight. We must know ourselves intimately. Insight is given by God over time. It cannot come all at once. At any one time, we are only ready to receive a small amount. We live in a darkness of understanding generated by our own sin, and the sin that surrounds us.

PART XIX: SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY AND
RECOMMENDED READING

- à Kempis, Thomas, *The Imitation of Christ*
- Bonhoeffer, Dietrich, *Life Together*
- Bonhoeffer, Dietrich, *The Cost of Discipleship*
- Book of Common Prayer*
- Calvin, John, *Institutes of the Christian Religion*
- Celtic Daily Prayer*
- Chambers, Oswald, *My Utmost for His Highest*
- Colson, Charles and Neuhaus, Richard John, *Evangelicals & Catholics Together*
- Dowley, Dr. Tim, ed., *The History of Christianity*
- Evangelisches Gesangbuch*
- Foster, Richard J, *Celebration of Discipline*
- Foster, Richard J, *Streams of Living Water*
- Gotteslob*
- Hocken, Peter, *One Lord, One Spirit, One Body*
- Hocken, Peter, *Streams of Revival*
- Hocken, Peter, *The Glory and the Shame*
- Hocken, Peter, *The Marranos: A History in Need of Healing*
- Hocken, Peter, *The Strategy of the Spirit?*
- Hocken, Peter, *Toward Jerusalem Council II*
- Howard, Thomas, *Evangelical is not Enough*
- Jenkins, Phillip, *The Next Christendom: The Coming of Global Christianity*
- Jenkins, Phillip, *The New Anti-Catholicism: The Last Acceptable Prejudice*
- Jones, Cheslyn, Wainwright, Geoffrey and Yarnold, Edward, ed. *The Study of Liturgy*
- Juster, Daniel, and Hocken, Peter, *The Messianic Jewish Movement*
- Meisel, Anthony C. and del Mastro, M. L, trans. and ed., *The Rule of St. Benedict*
- Merton, Thomas, *The Wisdom of the Desert*
- Miley, George, *Loving the Church...Blessing the Nations*
- Moffett, Samuel Hugh, *A History of Christianity in Asia*, Vol. 1
- Nouwen, Henri, *The Way of the Heart*
- Payne, Leanne, *Crisis in Masculinity*
- Payne, Leanne, *Listening Prayer*
- Payne, Leanne, *Real Presence*
- Payne, Leanne, *Restoring the Christian Soul*
- Payne, Leanne, *The Broken Image*
- Payne, Leanne, *The Healing Presence*

- Reardon, Patrick Henry, *Christ in the Psalms*
Schmemmann, Alexander, *Of Water & the Spirit*
Shelley, Bruce L., *Church History in Plain Language*
Talbot, John Michael, *The Way of the Mystics*
Teresa of Avila, *The Interior Castle*
Tickle, Phyllis, *The Divine Hours*
Tucker, Ruth A, *From Jerusalem to Irian Jaya*
Tournier, Paul, *A Place for You*
Webber, Robert E, *Ancient-Future Faith*
Webber, Robert E, *Evangelicals on the Canterbury Trail*
Webber, Robert E, ed. *The Complete Library of Christian Worship*.
 Vol. I. *The Biblical Foundations of Christian Worship*
 Vol. II. *The Twenty Centuries of Worship*
 Vol. III. *The Renewal of Sunday Worship*
 Vol. IV. *The Role of Music and Arts in Worship* (Books One and Two)
 Vol. V. *The Service of the Christian Year*
 Vol. VI. *The Sacred Actions of Worship*
 Vol. VII. *The Ministries of Worship*
Webber, Robert E. *Worship Old & New*
Wesley, John, *The Journal of John Wesley*
Willard, Dallas, *Hearing God*
Willard, Dallas, *Renovation of the Heart*
Willard, Dallas, *The Divine Conspiracy*
Willard, Dallas, *The Spirit of the Disciplines*
Willard, Dallas, *Knowing Christ Today*

INDEX

Index

- à Kempis, Thomas, 223
- A Prayer to Begin the Day
 - article, 39
- Abijah/Abijam, 147
- Abraham, 146
 - article, 169
 - friend of God, 169
- Abram. See Abraham
- Adam and Eve, 146
 - article, 164
- Ahab, 147
- Ahaz, 148
- Ahaziah, 148
- All Creatures of our God...
 - article, 57
- Altar, 5
- Amaziah, 147
- Ambrose, 54, 150
- Amon, 148
- Anabaptist Movement
 - date, 151
- Ancient Wells
 - and Celtic church, 183
 - background, 2
 - purpose, 5
 - readings, 8
- angels, 190, 225
- Anglican, 298
- Anna
 - article, 182
- anointing, 4
 - holy oil, 157
 - watchman, 182
- Anselm, 151
- Anthony
 - article, 191
 - Athanasius, 191
 - date, 150
 - John, 191
 - monastic movement, 191
- Antioch Network, 241
 - origins, 27
 - worship, 28
- anti-Semitism, 158, 235
- apostles, 4
- apostolic fathers, 187, 189
 - Ignatius, 187
- Apostolic Ministry, 134
- Apprenticeship to Jesus, 3
 - article, 216
 - benefits, 249
 - Foundation, 216
 - history, 3
 - teaching, 216
 - to Jesus, 24
- Aquinas, 151
- Asa, 147
- assimilation
 - Jewish believers, 158
- Athaliah (Queen), 147
- Athanasius, 150
- Augsburg Confession, 151
- Augustine, 150, 199
 - the missionary, 150
- Augustus, 149
- Auschwitz, 203
- authority
 - Elijah, 175
 - king, 175
 - prophet, 175
- autobiography
 - Thérèse, 200
- Azusa Street Revival, 150
- Baasha, 147
- Babylon, 148
- baptism
 - living out, 216
 - meaning, 220
 - rhythms of life, 219
- baptism of spirit
 - Edith Stein, 203
- baptism, early
 - article, 156
 - method, 156
- Baptist
 - beginnings, 152
- Barnabas, 149
- Barth, Karl, 153
- Basil, 150
- basilicas. See churches
- BCP. See Book of Common Prayer
- Be Thou My Vision
 - article, 55
- Benedict, 13, 15
 - Psalms, 17
 - rule, 150
 - work and prayer, 13
- benediction, 31
- Benedictus, 50
- Bennett, Dennis, 153
- Bernard of Clairvaux, 56, 151
- Bibliography, 252
- birth
 - Isaac, 172
 - Ishmael, 172
- Bishop
 - Ignatius' teaching, 187
- blessing, 2
- Bonhoeffer, Dietrich, 153, 223
- Boniface
 - missionary to Germans, 150
- Book of Common Prayer, 14
 - origin, 152
 - Psalms, 19
- Booth, William, 152
- Breastplate, 162, 193
- breviary, 14
- Britain, 149
- Bultmann, Rudolf, 153
- Bunyan, John, 152
- Caiaphas, 149
- Calvin, 151, 208
 - Nicene Creed, 209
- Carey, William, 152
- Carmelite
 - Edith Stein, 202
 - Teresa of Avila, 196
 - Thérèse, 200
- Carmelite convent
 - Edith Stein, 202
- Carmichael, Amy, 240
- Catherine of Sienna, 151
- catholic
 - meaning, 187
- Catholic Church, 4, 197
- Catholics, 196
 - and Jews, 204
- Celtic church
 - Ancient Wells*, 183
 - John, 183
 - missionary movement, 193
 - Patrick, 193
- Chalcedon
 - council, 150
- Charlemagne, 150
- children
 - consecration, 200
- Christ
 - baby, 179
 - Diety of, 209
 - Psalms, 15
- Christ hymns, 50
- Christ's likeness
 - Paul, 185
- church
 - buildings, 150
 - of Jew and Gentile, 149
- Church
 - circumcision, 158
 - first council, 150
 - history, 146
 - meaning, 3
 - nations, 158
- Church of England
 - Apostles' Creed, 208
- churches
 - Jewish roots, 158
 - unity, 159
- Claudius, 149
- Clement, 13
- Cologne, 2
- Communion. See Escharist
- Communion Service
 - Anglican, 214
- communion with God
 - before the fall, 23
- Compline, 46
 - framework, 32
- confession, 3, 30, 235
- consecration
 - children, 200
- Constantine, 209
- Constantinople, 151, 209
 - council, 150
- Council
 - first, 235
 - First Vatican, 152
 - Fourth Lateran, 151
 - Second Vatican, 153
 - Trent, 151, 196
- Counter-Reformation, 196
- covenant
 - Isaac, 171
 - Jews, 186
- Cranmer, Thomas, 152, 214
- Creed
 - Apostles', 43
 - Nicene, 35
- Creed, Apostles'
 - article, 208
- Creed, Nicene
 - article, 209
- creeds, 31
 - ecumenical, 209
- cross
 - Jesus*, 224
 - purpose, 249
 - symbol, 27
 - way of the, 240
- Crucifixion
 - date of, 149
- Crusaders, 235
- Crystal Night, 2
- daily offices
 - Psalter, 13
- Daniel, 148
- Dante, 151
- David, 146
- deacons, 187
- dependence
 - Elijah, 175
- Desert Fathers, 15, 191
- Development of a Work of God
 - article, 238
 - principles, 238
- Didache, 14
- disobedience, 166
 - Adam and Eve, 164
- Divine Hours
 - article, 30
 - Phyllis Tickle, 14
 - principles, 14
 - purpose, 14
- Dominic, 151
- Donatist Schism, 150
- Edict of Milan, 150
- Edith Stein
 - article, 202
- Elah, 147
- Elijah
 - article, 175
 - authority, 177
 - dependence, 177
 - fear, 178
 - Jesus, 175
 - John the Baptist, 175
 - principles, 177
- emotions, 232
- empowerment
 - Holy Spirit, 24
- Enoch, 146, 166
- Ephesians
 - letter of Ignatius, 188
- eschatology, 235
- Esther, 148, 177
- Eucharist, 53, 218
 - first, 156
 - Ignatius, 187
- Eusebius
 - Polycarp, 187
- Eve
 - and Mary, 181
- Evening Prayer, 42
 - framework, 32
- Exile, 148
- Exodus, 146
 - Biblical symbol, 217
 - date, 146
 - events of, 146
- exorcisms, 156
- Ezra, 148
- Ezra-Esther
 - dates of, 148
- fasting
 - and baptism, 156
- fear
 - Elijah, 176
- Financial
 - principles, 246
- Financial Well-Being
 - article, 241
 - principles, 241
- Finney, Charles, 152
- fleas, 205
- forgiveness, 3, 4, 30, 205, 236
 - by Jews, 3
 - of parents, 249
- formation
 - spiritual, 239
- Foster, Richard, 223
- Fox, George, 152
- Francis of Assisi, 41, 57, 151
- friend of God, 169
 - Abraham, 169
- future
 - preparing for, 247
- Galileo, 152
- Gemünd, 3

- Germans, 205
 Germany, 2, 3, 206, 234
 Gestapo, 205
Gloria, 48
 article, 48
 glory
 image of God, 163
 God
 encounters with, 215
 independence from, 22
 knowledge, 165
 God Is All-knowing
 (Omniscient), 124
 God Is All-powerful
 (Omnipotent), 122
 God Is Creator, 111
 God Is Eternal, 129
 God Is Everywhere Present
 (Omnipresent), 126
 God Is Holy, 114
 God Is Love, 116
 God Is Merciful, 120
 God Is Righteous, 118
 Godliness, 4
 gospel, 5, 14, 190
 apostolic proclamation,
 210
 spreading, 154
 Gospels, 23
 hymns, 49
 lectionary, 23
 Graham, Billy, 149
 Great Awakening, 149
 Greatest Commandment:
 Love
 Reading 1, 106
 Reading 2, 109
 greatness
 hidden, 193
 Gregory
 the Great, 148
 Guldenthal, 2
 Gutenberg, 148
 habits, 25
 of death, 225
 Hanna Miley
 family history, 2
 healing, 3, 27, 33, 210, 225
 means, 245
 Healing Commands of Jesus,
 104
 Heddeshheim. *See* Guldenthal
 Herod Agrippa, 149
 Herod Antipas, 149
 Herod the Great, 149
 Hezekiah, 148
Hiding Place, 203
 Hippolytus, 155
 Interrogatory Creed, 205
 history, 143, 145
 article, 143
 catholic period, 231
 free churches, 231
 of church, 4
 of Israel, 4
 overview, 143
 Protestant Reformation,
 231
 Protestant view, 143
 Roman Catholic and
 Orthodox, 231
 history, church
 pattern, 143
 holiness
 prophets, 170
 Holocaust, 2, 203
 Holy Spirit
 empowerment, 30
 life of the church, 143
 relying on, 218
 Honor
 Israel, 4
 parents, 250
 Hoshea, 147
 Huguenots, 152
 hymns, 36
 advent, 56
 early, 53, 155
 gloria, 53
 St. Patrick's Breastplate,
 192
 Ignatius
 Antioch, 186
 apostolic fathers, 186
 article, 186
 catholic Church, 186
 Eucharist, 186
 John, 186
 letter to Ephesians, 187
 letter to Romans, 186
 Peter, 186
 Polycarp, 186
 Trajan, 186
 immaturity
 cause, 250
 incarnation, 222
 Mary, 180
 income and expenses, 246
 independence
 from God, 27
 India, 155
 Inner Healing
 article, 250
 Innocent III, 153
 Inquisition, 154
 intercessors, 223
 interest
 on money, 246
 Investing money
 principles, 246
 Ireland
 Patrick, 192
 Irenaeus, 152, 207
 Isaac, 148
 article, 170
 birth, 171
 covenant, 170
 Ishmael
 birth, 171
 Israel, 3
 Abraham, 168
 desert wanderings, 148
 history, 147
 liturgy, 19
 Jacob, 148
 James
 apostle, 151
 epistle, 151
 Jehoahaz, 149, 150
 Jehoiachin/Jeconiah, 150
 Jehoiakim, 150
 Jehoram/Joram, 149
 Jehoshaphat, 149
 Jehu, 149
 Jeroboam I, 149
 Jeroboam II, 149
 Jerome, 152
 Jerusalem, 18, 56, 159, 234,
 236
 destruction, 151
 fall of, 150
 Jesuits, 154
 Jesus, 25, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61,
 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69,
 70,
 71, 72, 73, 74, 77, 78
 article on divinity, 66
 article on humanity, 68
 article on kingship, 76
 article on lordship, 74
 article on Messiahship, 78
 article on prophecy, 62
 article on savior, 70
 article on second coming,
 83
 article on teacher, 70
 article on uniqueness, 63
 birth date, 151
 cross, 223
 Elijah, 172
 master teacher, 213
 temple, 176
 Who is He?, 59
 Jesus Is Bridegroom
 article, 80
 Jesus Prayer
 article, 211
 Jewish people
 covenant, 204
 Jews, 159
 Catholics, 203
 Joash/Jehoash, 149
 John
 Anthony of Egypt, 191
 article, 182
 Celtic church, 182
 Ignatius, 186
 monasticism, 182
 Polycarp, 188
 visions, 182
 John the Baptist
 Elijah, 172
 Joram/Jehoram, 149
 Joseph, 148
 Josephus, 151
 Joshua, 148
 Josiah, 150
 Jotham, 149
 Judaism, 15
 Judges
 dates, 146
 Judgments
 of God, 250
 justice
 restoration, 160
 Justin Martyr, 152
 Justinian
 code, 152
 Kedusha, 55
 Kierkegaard, Søren, 155
 King James Bible
 date, 155
 King, Jr, Martin Luther, 156
 Kingdom of God
 Jesus' teaching, 214
 Reading 1, 84
 Reading 2, 87
 Reading 3, 89
 Reading 4, 91
 Reading 5, 93
 Kings
 of Israel and Judah, 150
 Kizito, 197
 Knox, John, 154
Kyrie Eleison
 article, 211
 laity
 prayers, 16
 worship, 15
 language, 29
 as symbols, 33
 Psalter, 19
 law
 Moses, 172
Lectio Divina
 groups, 24
 sacred reading, 22
 Lewis, C. S., 156
 Life out of Death
 Reading 1, 136
 Reading 2, 138
 Little Flower
 Thérèse, 194
 liturgy, 3, 16, 27, 29, 33
 Church of England, 207
 Divine Hours, 16
 Jewish, 54
 Protestant, 208
 Lord's Prayer, 36
 Lord's Supper. *See* Eucharist
 Love
 Thérèse, 200
 Loyola, 150
 Lustiger, Jean-Marie
 article, 204
 Luther, 150, 195, 207
 attitude toward Jews, 234
 Nicene Creed, 208
 Lwanga, Charles, 197
 Magnificat, 53
 Manasseh, 150
 martyrs, 3
 African, 199
 Carthage, 199
 Egypt, 199
 Scilli, 199
 Utica, 199
 Martyrs, Ugandan
 article, 198
 Mary
 article, 178
 and Eve, 180
 incarnation, 180
 meditation, 180
 maturity, 3, 35
 meal, 15
 Menahe, 145
 Messiah
 and gentile believers, 235
 return of, 236
 Messianic movement, 3, 31,
 233, 234
 Article, 159
 faith, 143
 synagogues, 149
 worship, 33
 MIDDAY Prayer, 45
 framework, 36
 Miley, George and Hanna
 teaching, 5
 ministry, 9, 27, 118, 172,
 175, 190,
 191, 192, 205, 214, 222,
 223,
 225, 241, 245, 248, 249
 apostolic, 195
 missionary
 strategy, 5
 missionary movements
 Celtic church, 192
 Mkasa, Joseph, 198
 monastery
 Clairvaux, 153
 Cluny, 153
 early, 4, 152
 monastic movement
 Anthony of Egypt, 191

Index

- monastic practice, 16
 - prayer, 14
- Moody, Dwight, 155
- Moravian church, 155
- Morning Prayer, 36
 - framework, 34
- Moses, 143
- Music
 - worship, 29
- Mwanga, King, 197
- Nadab, 144
- Nazis, 3, 234
- Nehemiah, 145
- New Testament
 - early, 147
- Nicea
 - council, 147
- Nicene Creed
 - date, 147
- Noah, 143, 166
- none (ninth hour), 14
- Notre Dame Cathedral, 203
- Nunc Dimittis*, 49
- O God, Our Help
 - article, 57
- O Sacred Head
 - article, 55
- obedience, 4
 - learning, 218
- Office, meaning, 14
- Olive Tree Fellowship
 - Jerusalem, 159
- Omri, 142
- opus dei*, 14
- Origen, 14, 147
- Oxford, 148
- Oxford Movement, 149
- Palmer, Phoebe, 149
- parents
 - honoring, 250
- Paris
 - university of, 148
- Patriarch. *See* Bishop
- patriarchs, 4, 143
- Patrick, 156
 - article, 192
 - date, 147
 - Ireland, 192
- Paul, 146
 - article, 184
 - Christ's likeness, 184
 - death of, 146
 - epistles of, 146
 - influence, 184
- Payne, Leanne, 215, 218, 221
- Pekah, 145
- Pekahiah, 145
- Pentecost
 - date of, 145
- persecution
 - early, 147
- Peter
 - death, 147
 - Ignatius, 186
- Pilgrim's Progress*, 151
- pilgrimage, 2
- Poland, 2
- Polycarp
 - apostolic fathers, 188
 - article, 188
 - Ignatius, 186, 188
 - John, 188
 - martyrdom, 188
- Pontius Pilate, 146
- Pope
 - Paul VI, 198
- Practicing the Presence of God
 - article, 228
- praise, 3
- Pray without ceasing, 14, 228
 - article, 25
- prayer, 3, 25, 205, 228
 - Benedict, 14
 - Christian, 13
 - community, 14
 - Jewish, 13
 - natural to unfallen man, 228
 - of Jesus, 5
 - principles, 28
 - Psalter, 21
 - what is it?, 27
- Prayer for the Church
 - article, 211
- prayers
 - Jewish, 13
 - schedule, 13
- presbyters, 186
- prime, 13
- prophecy
 - dominant theme, 225
- prophet
 - king, 175
- prophets, 4
 - Elijah, 172
 - holiness and repentance, 172
 - secret, 174
- Protestant Reformers
 - Apostles' Creed, 207
- Protestantism
 - problems of, 142
- Prudentius, 198
- psalms, 203
 - Christ, 16
- Psalms, 13, 15, 34, 210
 - Benedict, 20
 - Book of Common Prayer, 22
 - introduction, 16
 - liturgy, 17
- Psalter, 16, *See* Psalms also
 - daily offices, 13
- purpose
 - of God, 143
- Quakers, 153
- Qumram, 17
- Readings
 - Morning Prayer, 34
 - purpose and use, 6
- reconciliation, 3, 29, 154, 205, 235
 - among Christian traditions, 4
 - article on Jewish role, 233
 - Jewish witness and, 234
 - with Jews, 4
- Redeemer of the Nations
 - article, 56
- Rehoboam, 144
- repentance, 5, 155
 - prophets, 169
- replacement theology, 155, 234, 235
- Restore the Ancient Anointings
 - criteria for inclusion, 157
 - intention, 157
 - Introduction, 157
 - uses, 158
- retirement, 242
- retribution, 235
- Roman Catholic Church, 5
- Roman Empire, 13, 143
- Romans, 147
 - letter of Ignatius to, 186
- salvation
 - deliverance, 214
 - from guilt, 214
- Samaria, 148
- Samson, 146
- Samuel, 146
- Sanctus*
 - article, 53
- Sarai. *See* Sarah
- Satan, 227
- Saul, 144, *Also see* Paul
- schedule
 - prayer, 13
- Schism
 - date, 150
 - Papal, 151
- Schmemmann, Alexander, 221
- scripture, 195
 - allegorical sense, 25
 - literal sense, 25
 - moral sense, 25
- Scripture, 13, 24, 26, 27, 33, 34, 204
- secret place
 - Elijah, 172
 - prophets, 174
- secret room
 - Ten Boom, 204
- sext, 13
- Seymour, William, 154
- Shallum, 145
- silence, 33, 230
- Simeon
 - article, 181
- sin
 - and spiritual defeat, 238
 - effects, 214
- Smyrna
 - Polycarp, 188
- Solitude, 191, 230
- Solomon, 143
- Song
 - of David, 49
 - of Hannah, 49
 - of Moses, 49
- Songs
 - Article on Biblical, 49
 - Biblical, 33
 - contemporary, 33
 - in worship, 33
 - of the Church, 51
 - Old Testament, 49
- soul, 231
- Spanish Inquisition, 234
- Spiritual Battle, 3
 - article, 222
 - principles, 222
- Spiritual disciplines, 28
- spiritual formation
 - baptismal candidates, 207
- Spiritual Protection of a Work of God
 - article, 238
 - principles, 238
- Stein, Edith
 - article, 201
 - Jews, 201
 - philosophy, 201
- Stephen, 148
- suffrage, 201
- Support, raising
 - principles, 244
- symbol
 - cross, 30
 - Symbols, 30
 - synagogue, 2, 3, 210
 - synagogues, 18
 - Messianic, 234
 - Synod of Whitby, 151
 - Teaching Commands of Jesus
 - Reading 1, 94
 - Reading 2, 96
 - Reading 3, 98
 - Reading 4, 100
 - Reading 5, 102
 - Temple, 210
 - Jesus, 191
 - rebuilding, 146
 - terce, 13
 - Teresa of Avila, 199
 - article, 195
 - Edith Stein, 201
 - Interior Castle, 195
 - Teresia
 - Edith Stein, 201
 - Tertullian, 14, 148, 207
 - Thérèse
 - article, 199
 - Carmelite, 199
 - love, 200
 - thoughts
 - analytical, 231
 - imaginative/intuitive, 231
 - Tiberius, 146
 - Tickle, Phillis, 13
 - Titus, 146
 - TJCII. *See* Toward Jerusalem Council II
 - To You All Hearts
 - article, 211
 - Toward Jerusalem Council II, 155, 233
 - Townsend, Cameron, 152
 - Trajan
 - and Ignatius, 186
 - transformation, 4, 27
 - Christ's likeness, 219
 - process, 238
 - Trinity, 192
 - Uganda
 - church, 197
 - underground, 204
 - unity, 233
 - sins against, 233
 - Ur
 - Abraham, 164
 - Urban II, 150
 - Uzziah/Azariah, 145
 - Verwer, George, 214
 - vespers, 13
 - victim
 - immaturity, 172
 - self-centeredness, 172
 - vigil, 151
 - Vladimir, 148
 - Vulgate
 - date, 146
 - waiting
 - on God, 30
 - Walsh, Michael, 151
 - watchman
 - anointing, 181
 - Watts, Isaac, 56, 149
 - wealth
 - advantages, 244
 - and poverty, 244
 - developing, 249
 - Webber, Robert, 140
 - Wesley
 - John and Charles, 150

Index

- Westminster Confession, 150
- Whitefield, George, 150
- Wilberforce, William, 150
- Willard, Dallas, 195, 214, 221, 230
 - human components, 220
- wisdom, 172
 - Jesus, 213
- women
 - roles, 178
- work
 - Benedict, 14
 - World War II, 3
 - worship, 3, 13
 - article, 210
 - centered in God, 30
 - Church, 33
 - contemporary, 33
 - early, 51
 - history, 30
 - Israel, 28, 33
 - leading, 29
 - monastic, 13
 - music, 29
 - New Testament, 49, 210
 - Old and New* quotation, 142
 - wounding, 250
 - Wyclif, John, 150
 - Wycliffe Bible Translators, 152
 - Xerxes, 173
 - Yavneh, 234
- Yeshua. See Jesus
- Zack, Marcus, 2
- Zechariah, 143
- Zedekiah, 145
- Zimri, 143
- Zwingli, 149